

**2016 ANNUAL CONFERENCE
OF
ASIAN ASSOCIATION OF POLICE STUDIES**

**“The Global Governance of Policing:
Police, Societies, and Markets”**

PROCEEDINGS



July 6 - 9, 2016

**Hosted By:
College of Criminal Justice, Sam Houston State University
Asian Association of Police Studies**

**George J. Beto Criminal Justice Center,
Sam Houston State University, Huntsville, Texas**

Contents

Preface	5
Plenary Session 1	7
Culture and Police: Exploring New Direction of Asian Police Research.....	9
<i>Jihong Solomon Zhao</i>	
Session 1	13
Public Safety: Entities' Relationship and Construction of Collaborative Mode in Urban Community in China	15
<i>Jie Qian</i>	
Community Policing in Taiwan.....	20
<i>Charles Chang</i>	
Reconstruct the Community Fire Policing: Grid Management & Network Governance	23
<i>Bukui Zhao</i>	
Research on the Innovation of Social Safety Governance and Policing Modes under the Neighborhoods System	32
<i>XUE Xiangjun</i>	
The Effect of Community Policing: Does the Community Policing Program have a Positive Effect on Citizen Participants' Ratings of the Police?.....	38
<i>Jae-Seung Lee</i>	
Session 2	43
The Dynamics of the International Police Cooperation Among China and its Neighbor Countries.....	45
<i>Yuewei Ge</i>	
A Legitimate Question: A Comparative Look at Police Legitimacy in Asia and in the United States	52
<i>Kwan-Lamar Blount-Hill, JD, and Yunho Yeom, JD</i>	
Cultural Impacts on Police Security: A Reflection on My Experience in China	59
<i>Andrew Robinson</i>	
Digital Forensics in the Panda Case.....	68
<i>Yonghao, Mai, Jun, Zhang, and Shufang, Yang</i>	
Session 3	77
Perceptions of Police Integrity Among Taiwanese Police and Businessmen	79
<i>Kuo, Shih-Ya (Connie) and Chang, Kuang-Ming</i>	
Nigerian Immigrants' Perception of the Police: An Exploratory Study of the Impact of Contact with Police	80
<i>Hsiao-Ming Wang and Sanni Ibrahim</i>	
The Effect of Micro-level Calls for Service on Public Attitudes Toward the Police	88
<i>Fei Luo and Ling Ren</i>	

Exploring the Corruption Behaviors Among Correctional Officers in Taiwan: A Preliminary Study	91
<i>Lai, Yung-Lien, PhD</i>	
On the Identification and Prevention of Grueling Interrogation.....	92
<i>Ma Tingting</i>	
Citizens' Political Preference, Contacted Police Experiences, and Attitudes Toward the Police in Taiwan: An Application of Easton's Theory	99
<i>Lai, Yung-Lien, PhD, and Tsai, Tyan-Muh, PhD</i>	
The Impacts of Police Contact: Findings from a survey in Thailand.....	100
<i>Prapon Sahapattana</i>	
Information, Democracy and the Rule of Law: Three Dimensions of Police Strategical Innovation	105
<i>Xing Panzhou</i>	
Session 4.....	107
New Challenge of Cross-border Policing Cooperation of TAIWAN	109
<i>Samuel, Lin</i>	
Synergetic Governance: The Way Public Security Organs Choose for Social Public Security Management Innovation	112
<i>Jia Hongwen and Xu Aihua</i>	
Correlates of Police Chief Turnover in Texas.....	121
<i>Yudu Li, PhD</i>	
Session 5.....	127
Characteristics and Investigation and Prevention Countermeasures of Illegal Fund-raising Through P2P Platform —Taking Zhejiang Province as An Example	129
<i>Xu Peng and LI Qing</i>	
The Framework and Implementation of a Commission on Justification of Police Armed Action in Taiwan.....	132
<i>Alice Sang</i>	
Session 6.....	133
Judicial Dilemmas and Countermeasures on Crime Cognizance of Underground Banks in China.....	135
<i>Liu Weiwen</i>	
Negotiated Control of Lived Space in Urban Environments: A Theoretical Critique	138
<i>Judith Harris and Kingsley Ejiogu</i>	
Policing Global Challenges: Taiwan Experience Exchange in Fighting Telecoms Fraud	148
<i>Wen-Chih "Billy" Huang</i>	
Measures against Drug Abuse in Japan.....	157
<i>Shinji Nakamura</i>	
Plenary Session 2.....	161
Strengthening the Relationship Between Academia and Practice Through International Efforts	163
<i>Phillip M. Lyons</i>	

Preface

It gives us great pleasure to present the Proceedings of the 2016 Annual Conference of the Asian Association of Police Studies, entitled, “The Global Governance of Policing: Police, Societies, and Markets.” The conference was held on the campus of Sam Houston State University, Huntsville, Texas, July 6-9, 2016.

As is always the case, a conference cannot be held, and its proceedings not published, without the contributions of many people. First, we would like to thank all presenters for their timely submissions of their presentations. Without exception they responded quickly to our requests. Second, officers and officials of AAPS supported our efforts whenever we called on them for help. Third, several graduate and undergraduate students of the College of Criminal Justice served as volunteers for airport runs and logistical support. Fourth, we would like to once again acknowledge the financial support provided by the Office of the Vice President for Academic Affairs of Sam Houston State University, the Correctional Management Institute of Texas, and the Bill Blackwood Law Enforcement Management Institute of Texas. Finally, we would like to thank Harriet McHale and Beth Kuhles for their work on publications and publicity.

It has been an honor for us to organize this conference and we look forward to participating in AAPS conferences for many years.

The Organizing Committee

Jurg Gerber

Kate Angulski

Amanda Burris



Plenary Session 1



A Brief History of Police Culture Research

- Klinger (1997) theorized that police subculture can be examined at the division level (police officer vigor).
- Herbert (1998) argued that police subculture is a combination of formal rules and informal shared values.
- In community policing reform, police culture is often considered as a key element that needs to be changed.

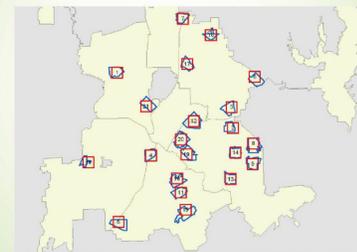
Several Popular Policing Strategies Do Not Fit the Asian Environment

- It is my argument: current popular policing strategies in U.S. such as hot spots policing, zero tolerance policing, and predictive policing do not fit the unique social environment in most Asian countries for two primary reasons.
 - The use of force rationale differs significantly between Asian countries (China, Japan, South Korean, and Taiwan).
 - The crime rates are significantly lower in most Asian cities than in American cities (e.g., murder rate in Shanghai compared to Houston).

The Disappearance of Police Culture Research and the Focus on Prediction

- In his recent article, Green (2014) carefully reviewed 100 hundred year history of American police research and lamented the change in the direction of research for the past 20 years (evidence based).
- He called for a balance of research between predictive research and the **meaning** of police research.
- The argument is well granted and has its rationale. I agree that the scope of evidence based research is too limited.

An Example of Hot Spots in Dallas, Texas



NCJRS NATIONAL CRIMINAL JUSTICE REFERENCE SERVICE

OFFICE OF JUSTICE PROGRAMS BJA BJS NIJ OJP OVC SMART

SEARCH results for: police culture

Results in Publications (Full Text)

- **Analyst Professional Development Road Map**
NCJ 218782, John Davis, BJA Symposium, (20 pages)
PDF NCJRS Abstract
- **Papers From the Harvard Executive Session on Policing and Public Safety (2008-2015)**
NCJ 248182, September 2015, (2 pages)
PDF NCJRS Abstract
- **Recruiting Newcomers to the South African Police Service for the Organization's Culture**
NCJ 213296, J. Stijn, Acta Criminologica, 18, 3, 2005, 83-100, (19 pages)
HTML NCJRS Abstract
- **Strategies for Intervening with Officers Through Early Intervention Systems: A Guide for Front-Line Supervisors**
NCJ 213136, Samuel Walker Ph.D., Stacy Cherok M.B.A., Anna Bunker, February 2006, (82 pages)
Agency Summary PDF: See NCJRS Abstract | [Submit a Correction](#) | [View this document](#)
- **Federal Intervention in Local Policing: Pittsburgh's Experience with a Consent Decree**
NCJ 212980, Robert C. Davis, Nicole J. Henderson, Janet Mandelbaum, Christopher W. O'Neil, Joel Miller, October 2003, (72 pages)

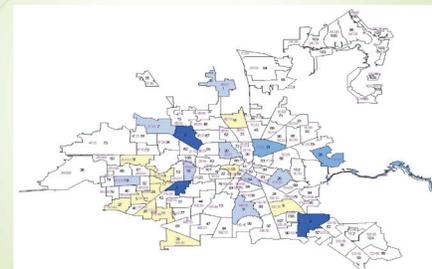
Crime Incidents at One of the Hot Spot



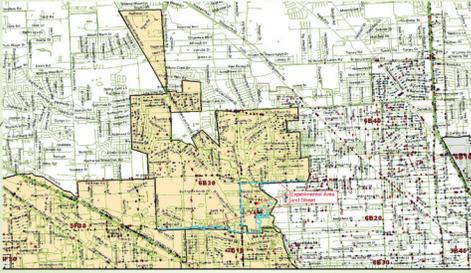
Number of Police Culture Related Publications in PQ and Policing (None from Asian Countries)

Journal	Number of Articles	Number of Police Culture Articles
Police Quarterly		
2015	18	0
2014	17	0
Policing		
2015	48	3
2014	48	2
Total	131	5

An Example: Hot Spots in Houston (No Hotspots Policing in Kingwood Area)



Crime Events in One of the Hot Spot



The Golden Mean (Zhong Yong in Confucius Doctrine)

- When I was servicing on Dr. Wu's dissertation committee, a battery of personality questions developed in the west caught my attention.
- The survey was conducted in Taiwan. Eight hundred and eighty-eight police officers in three different cities filled out the questionnaire.
- I noticed that police officers in Taiwan chose middle the road (neither agree nor disagree=3 from 1 to 5) in large proportion.
- Nine questions particularly drew my attention.
- This is not a perfect and well designed measure but can have significant potential.

An Example of Use of Force HPD Shootings and Injuries (Pinkerton, 2013, Houston Chronicle)

- From 2008 to 2012, officers shot 121 people (a quarter of them was not armed).
- 52 of them died.
- Harris County grand juries cleared HPD officers of criminal wrong doings in all shootings from 2008 to 2012.
- The last time an HPD officer was charged and convicted for a shooting was in 2004 (the death of 14-year old boy and convicted of negligent homicide).
- Since then, grant juries cleared 288 consecutive times for shootings.

Question	Percentage of Choosing Neither Answer
I am someone who is:	
1. talkative	32.5%
2. reserved	39.5%
3. relaxed, handles stress well	32.0%
4. full of energy	37.7%
5. generate a lot of enthusiasm	39.5%
6. tends to be quite	36.3%
7. can be moody	30.6%
8. outgoing and sociable	42.2%
9. nerves	34.6%
Measure of middle of the road: add all neither answer together and the range is 0 to 9.	
It is a significant predictor of job satisfaction among officers	

A New Direction of Police Research: Culture

- Asian countries have their distinctive culture and values that have been around for over two-thousand years.
- The informal and culture oriented way of life runs deep in Asian countries (e.g., Confucius doctrines).
- There are significant cultural differences between Asian and U.S. (e.g., individual freedom vs. social harmony).
- Have we used these unique cultural elements in our research on Asian police?

An Example of Benevolent Sympathy

- When we examine public attitudes toward the police, the model is largely copied from relevant research in U.S.
- Three models are often included in the analysis (the demographic, the neighborhood environment, and the contact with police models).
- In Asian countries, the unique environment may suggest other variables can be as good as the variables derived from the three models.
- I got this idea of benevolent sympathy when reading an article and the following photos.
- Benevolent sympathy runs deep in Asian culture (e.g., Buddhism).
- Recent data collected in Taiwan found that benevolent sympathy is a significant predictor of public attitudes toward the police.

My Thoughts and Examples of Culture in Police Research

- In this final section, I will give a few examples of how culture or value elements can be incorporated in the research on Asian police.
 - The middle of the road.
 - The benevolent sympathy of the police.
 - The cultural class and juvenile attitudes toward the police.



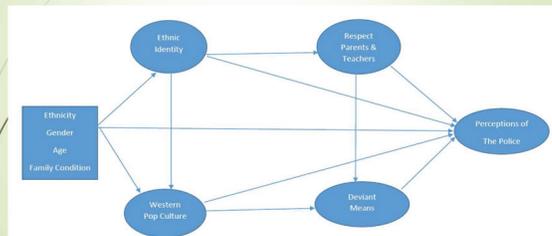


Measures

Western Pop Culture	Illegal Means
European and American pop music can make me feel high. "Damn" good! (How to translate into Chinese?)	If you want to be successful, you need to have a powerful daddy.
I like Rock and roll music.	It is difficult for young people to achieve their dreams without a good family background.
I hope I can have more European and American name brand commodities such as cell phone, clothing, jewelry, and exercise equipment.	If the objective can be reached, it is ok to accept "informal norms."
I like to read European and American fashion magazines.	Money decides an individual's social status and relations.
I like to see Hollywood blockbuster movies.	
1=strongly disagree to 5=strongly agree	1=strongly disagree to 5=strongly agree



The Model (R square=.20 and Demographic Contribution is Minimum. The Model Fits Data Well)



The Clash of Culture and Attitudes toward the Police among Juveniles

- My coauthors and I attempted to measure the impact of culture on juvenile attitudes toward the police.
- There are two different cultures in the model.
- The traditional culture vs. western pop culture.
- The data were collected from 22 minority middle schools (80% minority students and 20% Han students) in half of a province in China.
- A total of 6,700 students were surveyed.

Conclusion

- If formal organization rises from information organization, then the informal organization in Asian police departments is stronger than their counterparts in U.S.
- Culture represents the meaning of the police and the research on American police culture has been at the low point in the recent decades.
- Scholars of Asian police can take the advantage of Asian culture and examine its unique contribution to the police.
- Keep a balance between evidence based and other topics of policing is important.

Measures

Ethnic Identity	Respect
I spend a lot of time looking for the information of my ethnicity (e.g., history, tradition, and habits).	All the seniors should be respected. I always respect my parents and seniors.
I actively participate group activities. A majority of them are from the same ethnic background.	In front of your parents, we should behave ourselves properly.
I clearly understand the history of my ethnic background and its associated meaning.	I always respect my teachers.
In order to learn more about my ethnicity, I often talk with my friends.	Teachers always pass over the knowledge to students.
I attend ethnic gatherings including food festival, music concert, and traditional holidays.	When teachers give me a lesson about life, I always listen attentively.
	Teacher is always right!
1=never to 4=always	1=strongly disagree to 5=strongly agree

Thanks!

Questions?

Session 1



Public Safety: Entities' Relationship and Construction of Collaborative Mode in Urban Community in China

Jie Qian

Jiangsu Police Institute, University of Pittsburgh

Abstract

Today in China, the entities that maintain public safety through China's cities can be divided into governmental organizations, non-profit organizations (NGOs) and the safety companies. The relationship between these multiple bodies should move from the loose cooperation based on government monopoly to institutionalized collaboration. In this new mode, the government provides strategic financial, intellectual and regulatory resources. Its relationship with NGOs should move from formal approval to the combination of formal approval and freedom to act independently to some extent. This mode also works for safety governance in urban communities. We can thus resolve the dilemma of community committee's management due to absolute control by government. Government should empower social subjects to create better development environment to promote self-organization in collaborative network and communication platforms to improve coordination of NGOs, professional associations, companies and individuals. The effects at outside organizations are helpful to realize public safety projects and we can realize collaboration by creating more projects in public safety. The community policing strategy also needs to be reformed. The police and community organizations should strengthen the relationship between police and residents in the community. Then they can prevent crime and maintain public safety by promoting social subjects' interactions.

Keywords: Public safety, Urban community, Collaboration, Governance

Since the idea of "collaboration government" was raised in 1999, scholars have devoted more and more attentions on the "whole of Government" or "collaborate governance". For china, in the area of public safety management, now it is imperative to transfer the unitary role of government into multiple entities' collaboration. The author firstly examined the entities' relationship in urban community's public safety management in China and the control mode of public safety supply in China now. After constructing the ideal new collaborative supply mode of community safety, the author explored the countermeasure to improve community safety governance by rebuilding entities' new relationship.

Entities providing public safety services and their relation in China

Based on theory of public goods, public safety, as pure public goods, should be mainly provided by government, but many other entities have attended the public safety system. The entities can be divided into governmental organizations, non-profit organizations (NGOs) and the safety companies.

Police organization is the typical entity of governmental organizations providing public safety. This kind of entity includes public sectors and their staff which take public power and the means of compelling force as the backing. The advantage of this kind of entity is that their prevalent sanction brings about perfect implementation capacity and effectiveness. It can mobilize and integrate all sorts of social resources to meet the requirement for safety, whereas its disadvantage is very obvious. Overexpansion of that entity's authority probably causes not only the overdraft of public expenditure and social costs, but also power abuse and rent-seeking, even leading to violation to legitimate interest of citizens.

The second kind of entity is safety companies and organizations with the purpose of seeking profits, which provide commercialized safety services. Government, social organizations and individuals purchase or pay for that public goods and services to obtain safety. The merit of it is that the services they provide are flexible and effective, which is exactly what the customer's requirement. But they also have demerit that it's hard for them to realize social equity on the nature of pursuing profits. They can only serve for the particular target group and area.

The third one is NGOs, taking voluntary patrol team as an example. They characterized by voluntary work, spontaneity and non-profit purpose. Their merit is that they are so close to the public that it is easy for them to gain good social response and prestige, and that they can observe and find the slight changes of public safety system to deal with the challenges. The defect of this kind of entity lies in the limitation of fund, talents and resources.

In China, for the entities' relationship, it is still in a control mode. Government is the dominant entity. It gives out order from top to bottom and requires other entities to fit in. To the community level, it is difficult to realize the complete community autonomy. Administrative tendency caused formalism in community election. The measures such as division of community committee and community workstation, as well as the exploration of the separation of legislative and executive powers in community organization, haven't made community organization out of administration. (Zhiguo Xu & lei Ma, 2013) Empirical study demonstrates that the power of community committee isn't derived from the committee members' ability or authorization of residents, but from part of the residents' agreement. That supports the country's control on the community. (Shengli Guo, 2013) To the field of safety, the power mainly comes from country. In community safety system of China, government and public sectors, especially local government and police organization are on absolute dominant position. Public safety entities' relationship in urban community of China is shown as diagram 1.

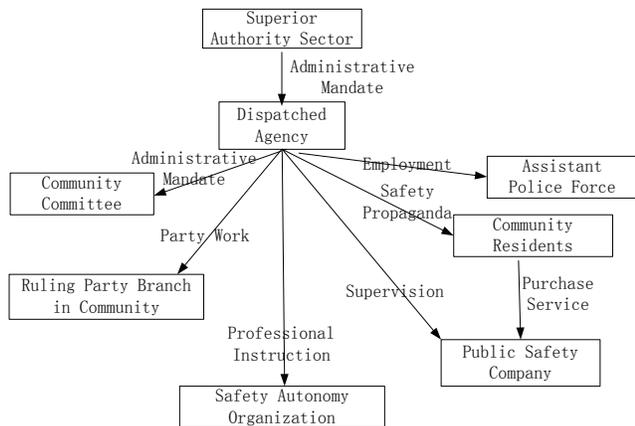


Diagram1: Public Safety Entities' Relationship in Urban Community in China

Superior authority sectors include superior government, police organization, judicial sector and

safety supervision institution, etc. Their mandates are implemented by dispatched agencies. Dispatched agencies send administrative mandates to ruling party branch and community committee. They all provide services for safety to residents in that community. Theoretically, community residents committee is autonomous organization and its limits of autonomy powers are specified in *Constituent Act of Community Committee*. Community committee voted by residents professionally instructs other safety autonomous organizations, while ruling party branch undertakes the task of political thoughts building in community committee and safety autonomous organizations. Both community committee and ruling party branch do safety propaganda to residents and supervise public safety companies. Actually, it's different in reality society. In fact, all the community committees' management behaviors are mandated by superior authority sectors, and the relationship between safety entities is in "from top to bottom" mode. It is the extension of hierarchy of bureaucracy. Main resources of public safety management are monopolized by public power. So government and police organization are decision-makers, controller of resources in safety supply. They are in absolute dominate position while other entities accept mandates passively and participate in safety project sometimes. In the actual situation, community committee is only the implementation organization of safety mandates instead of autonomous organization. Other safety entities in community, such as property management company, safety technical manufacturer and voluntary petrol team, are all in passive assistant position.

In the view of authorization, safety provision in China is "mandate-control" mode based on contract authorization. In human being's history, there are three typical authorization modes. They are direct authorization in ancient Greece, thearchy authorization in feudal society and indirect authorization based on representative system in modern times. This representative system spreads inside the public sectors and between the public sectors and other social organizations. Its core is contract authorization, which is built on the principle-agent relationship and contract spirit. All the actions must be in the premise of government agreement and the jural relation of it. That is to say, other safety entities couldn't organize projects of public safety spontaneously without the permission or mandate of public power. And even having got permission, other safety entities are still under supervisory of public power entities during the entire process of safety actions.

Building new mode of public safety's collaboration system of China

To build the new mode of public safety's collaboration system, the following factors should be considered: structures between the entities, the role of government and authorization pattern.

It is momentous to change the structures of all kinds of entities into self-organization hierarchy system. In the view of system theory, self-organization hierarchy system also needs an authority sector similar to traditional structure. But instead of control, the function of this authority sector is to lead and promote cooperation by persistent incentive and resources supply in the area of rule, process and technology. The other entities are broadly mobilized and break the earlier balance to adapt to the change of environment. Thus a new connected social consciousness was formed and qualitative changes take place to reach a new balance and a harmonious safety network. The new relationship is shown as diagram 2.

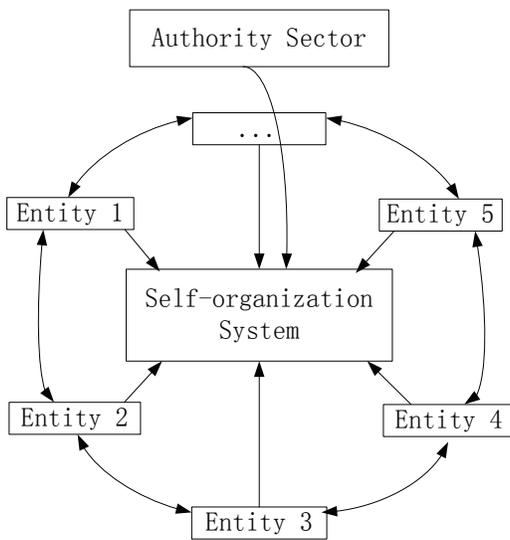


Diagram 2: Entities' Relationship in Collaboration System

Government, as the authority sector, has dual role of strategic leader and resources' provider in this system. In the background of risk society, government's role has changed a lot accordingly. Public safety system has become a complex social activity network. System's complexity not only lies in that it is composed by large quantity of segments, but also that all the segments in it have complex activities. (H. Haken, 2010) For so many years, government was devoted to manufacturing

prevention and control network. Precision degree, complexity and controlling force in this network reached higher and higher level with government's powerful promotion to cope with increasing society risk. Actually, many safety risks can't be reduced only by putting government in the position of absolute controller of the network or by reinforcing its power persistently. It is momentous to attach importance to the safety strength lying deeply in collective actions system of civil society. Therefore, it is necessary to change government's function from safety system's builder into explorer, instructor and implementator for safety factors, which is based on deeply comprehending and highly valuing to self-organization system. It's government's mission to bring about self-organization in safety and promote its development. Specifically, government needs to stick at several aspects: (1) modeling social trust in proper safety ideals; (2) developing collaborative safety organization and explore safety collaboration by projects; (3) modifying and perfecting laws and regulations concerning with regard to safety; (4) studying on incentive policy and excavating all sorts of safeguard resources; (5) dynamic monitoring safety index by safety information network and platform, etc.

In accordance, authorization pattern also needs a change. Contract authorization is widely applied in public sectors due to its normative function, specialization, stability and foreseeability. But in the practice of management, some problems such as excessive control, stereotyped behavior are easy to appear. In the theory of function assignment authorization originated from enterprise management, results-oriented devolution to the lower levels is proposed instead of "mandates-control" management. This theory indicates that it is important to endow employees with extra rights to attend the organization's decision-making. During this process, employees are prone to get sense of mission and sense of achievement, and then to finish tasks independently. This theory can be applied into public safety management. According to public demand, government as a core entity sets public safety aims and designs and organizes some projects to incentive other entities to participate in. Then, government builds policy support mechanism to enhance interactions between multiple entities. A virtuous circle can be improved by collaboration in public safety.

New public safety management in urban community of China based on collaboration mode

Based on the new collaboration mode, new public safety management in urban community of China aims to build self-organized mechanism with all the entities actively participation in the domination of government. Its entire system is shown in the following diagram.

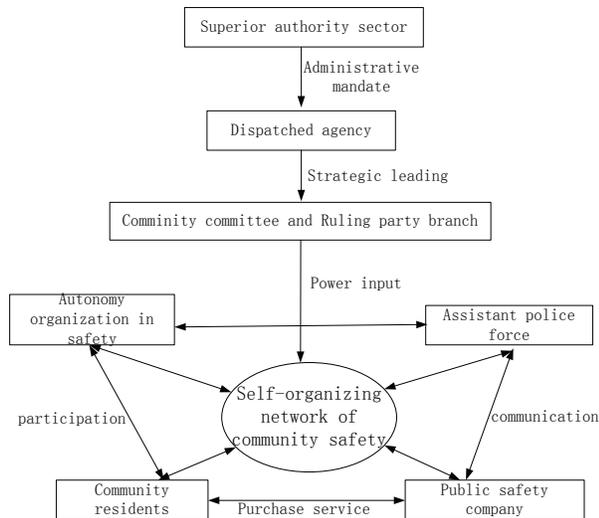


Diagram 3: Collaborative Governance in Community Safety Management

Compared with this system, the lap between the ideal mode and the reality lies in the following aspects.

Firstly, it is difficult for the entities to pursue self-organization structure. All the other entities, including enterprises, autonomous organization in community, ordinary citizens, are subordinate to local government. Power of law enforcement in public safety is concentrated in police. In China, tasks for the police are too onerous while police forces in community layer are very limited. So it is critical to find some employees to help the police to complete community services. Besides, due to insufficient development of civil society, ordinary residents and their organizations in community have many difficulties in spontaneous collective actions in criminal preventions and safety early warnings.

Secondly, the controlling role of government is prone to cause power and accountability dilemma for community committees. Since there are many authority sectors, typically including police organizations, judicial institutions, supervision

sectors in public safety, at the upper layers of community committee. They provide resources and instruct affairs to community committee from different angles. For community committees themselves, they receive many mandates and tasks, which is also the basis of evaluation index to their performances. This determined that they are responsible only for the superior, and they are even in the status of “work until get authorization”. Though community committee and ruling party branch in community undertake large quantity of affairs, they have little independent power and accountability. When they interact with other safety entities in community, they can be neither as representative of public power, nor as autonomous organization. This dilemma makes it hard for them to manage public safety affairs.

Thirdly, function assignment authorization to social entities is insufficient, leading to difficulties in collaboration in the field of public safety. There are two aspects show participation predicament in community safety. On one hand, there is no strong motivation for community residents to participate in public safety affairs due to the decrease of social trust. Participation network is also not strong. Social participation network in China is mainly vertically organized. Since carrying out reform and opening policy, China has developed a lot. But community construction is endowed with strong political colors, which makes it hard for ordinary citizens to participate. Administrative tendency of community committee directly leads to the absence of residents’ willing to participate. The existing fact in urban community is that all residents’ main activities is not in community. Therefore the duty of community is only to deal with the affairs outside work units. (Shuqin Yang & Niuli Wang, 2010) On the other hand, there are difficulties in NGOs’ development in China due to lack of independence, authority and public trust. In the field of public safety, government dominates social organizations by bring them into the frame of comprehensive administration of public security.

To cope with all these problems and develop collaborations in public safety, all the work should be started from choosing and designing some certain areas. In urban community, local government and police design strategies by regulations, such as holding joint conferences, hearing system in community safety affairs, network platform of community safety, etc. Community committee is responsible for the implementation of regulations. Then under the leading of government, some powers of safety supervision and decision-making can be authorized to self-organization network in

community. By exploring potential participation entities of public safety and designing more kinds of authorization, government encourages more participation in public safety. Simultaneously, comprehensive information platform is built to predict and execute risks. Community committee gradually becomes developer, protector and manager of self-organization network. Only when Autonomous organizations gain autonomy to plan and implement safety projects, could their action forces be raised. Collaboration effects are helpful to maintain community's stability and development.

References

- Bailey, John & Damment, Lucia(ed.) (2006), *Public Security and Police Reform in the Americas*, Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press.
- Bayley, David & Shearing, Clifford (1996), "The future of Policing", *Law and Society Review*, Vol. 30, No. 3, pp.585-606.
- Berry, Jeffrey M., Portney, Kent E. & Thomson, Kent.(1993), *The Rebirth of Urban Democracy*, Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution.
- Ericson, Richard V. & Haggerty, Kevin D. (1997), *Policing in the Risk Society*, Toronto: University of Toronto Press.
- Ginneken, Jaap V. (2003), *Collective Behavior and Public Opinion*, New Jersey:Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.
- Goldstein, Herman (1990), *Problem-Oriented Policing*, New York: McGraw-Hill.
- Hancock, Barry W. & Sharp, Paul M. (2000), *Public Policy, Crime, and Criminal Justice*, London: Prentice-Hall.
- Hermann Haken, (2010), *Information and Self-Organization*, New York: Springer Publishing Company.
- Johnston, Les & Shearing, Clifford (2003), *Governing Security: Explorations in Policing and Justice*, London: Routledge.
- Lab, Steven P. (2004), "Crime prevention, politics, and the art of going nowhere fast", *Justice Quarterly*, vol. 21, No.4, pp.681-692.
- Loader, Ian(1997), "Plural policing and democratic governance", *Social and Legal Studies*, vol. 9, No. 3, pp.323-345.
- Maguire, Mike & John, Tim (2006), "Intelligence led policing, managerialism and community engagement: Competing priorities and the role of the National Intelligence Model in the UK", *Policing and Society*, vol. 16, No.1, pp.67-85.
- Murphy, Kristina & Hinds, Lynette & Fleming, Jenny(2008), "Encouraging Public Cooperation and Support for Police", *Policing & Society*, vol 18, No.2, pp.136-155.
- Oliver, Willard (2000), "The Third Generation of Community Policing: Moving Through Innovation, Diffusion, and Institutionalization", *Police Quarterly* 3, No. 4, pp.367-388.
- Pease, Ken(1997), "Crime Prevention", in Maguire, Mike and Morgan, Rod and. Reiner, Robert (eds.), *Oxford Handbook of Criminology*, Oxford: Clarendon Press.
- Perri 6(1997), *Holistic Government*, London: Demos.
- Perri 6(2004), "Joined-Up Government in the Western World in Comparative Perspective: A Preliminary Literature Review and Exploration", *Journal Public Administration Research and Theory*, vol. 14, No. 1, pp.103-138.
- Riecher, Lisa M. & Roberg, Roy R. (1990), "Community Policing : A Critical Review of Underlying Assumptions", *Journal of Police Science and Administration*, vol. 17 , no. 2, pp.105 - 114.
- Guo, Shengli(2013), "Power Structure of Community: Comparative Case Study", *Shanghai administration institute journal* 6, pp. 80-93.
- Skolnick, Jerome H. & Bayley, David H. (1988), "Theme and Variation in Community Policing", *Crime and Justice* 10, pp. 1-37.
- Valadez, Jorge M. (2001), *Deliberative Democracy, Political Legitimacy, and Self Democracy in Multicultural Societies*, New York:USA Westview Press.
- Xu, Zhiguo & Ma, Lei (2013), "Difficult to Get Rid of Administrative Tendency---Dilemma in Autonomous Reform of Urban Community", *Yunnan administration institute journal* 6, pp. 69-73.
- Yang, Shuqin & Wang, Niuli(2010), "Intervention of Public Power and Evolution of Community Concept: Reflection on Urban Community's Construction in China", *Yunnan administration institute journal* 6, pp. 167-173.

Community Policing in Taiwan

Charles Chang

Central Police University, Taiwan

Objectives: Evaluate outcome effectiveness of a community-oriented policing program in Taiwan dubbed *Our Paichusuo*.

Methods: A quantitative quasi-experimental design featured outcome measures of social disorder and crime, residents' perceptions of police and public safety, police job satisfaction, and police regard for the *Our Paichusuo* program. Analyses entail test and control group comparisons, graphs, segmented regressions, non-parametric statistics, and bivariate Pearson correlation.

Results: The COP treatment area had less social disorder, less total crime, better crime clearance rates overall, less larceny, higher larceny clearance rates, and greater job satisfaction among police officers. However, no significant differences were noted in residents' perceptions of police and safety between the two areas, and violent crime decreased less and its clearance rates increased less in the treatment than in the comparison area.

Conclusions: The *Our Paichusuo* COP-inspired mode shows a positive impact on police job satisfaction, which might be attributed to job enrichment. For the purpose of crime reduction and prevention, a specific strategy to deal with crime should be integrated into the partnership and relationship-building dimensions of COP practices.

Key words: community policing; Taiwan, *Our Paichusuo*; quasi-experimental evaluation.

Community-Oriented Policing in Taiwan

Chang, Kuang-Ming (Charles)
Professor & Dean of Justice Administration College, Central Police University

Kuo, Shih-Ya (Connie)
Assistant Professor of Faculty of Social Sciences, University of Macau

Presented at Sam Houston State University
July 7, 2016

Two types of police operations in general

- Shift based
 - USA
 - Community policing by **programs**
- Geography based
 - Taiwan
 - Community policing by **institutions**
 - **police beat, household visit, order maintenance (Broken Window Theory)**

The purpose of the study

- Introducing Taiwan's police system relevant to community policing.
 - Using a community-oriented policing project in Taiwan as an example
 - *Our Paichusuo* (police station)

Central police organization in Taiwan



General information on police operations (activities) in Taiwan

- Police operations are carried out in three tiers.
- The basic unit: a police beat, which in principle, covers the area of a village or neighborhood and is managed by a police officer, constitutes the basic unit.
- The executing unit refers to a police station that is established across Taiwan depending on the crime rate, population and administrative district boundaries, etc. Police officers assigned to police stations are the major force for order maintenance and account for approximately 34% of the nation's entire police force.
- The planning and supervisory organization refers to police precincts and departments.

Our Paichusuo – a community-oriented project in Tainan County

- Tainan County Police Department
 - 10 police precincts
 - 115 Paichusuos
 - 963 beat officers
- Our Paichusuo
 - Services for Local Cyclists
 - One Paichusuo, One Theme
 - Electronic Policing (E-Policing)
 - Mobile Policing



Specific types of police operations in Taiwan

- Police operations can be classified into several types, including household visit, patrol, stop-and-check, guard, call-responding at a duty counter and stand-by duty.
- The patrol is the heart of police duties. Based on the situations, it varies in types such as foot patrol, car patrol and motorcycle patrol on police beat to maintain public and traffic order, to exchange opinions with the community, to offer advice or respond to reports.
- In addition, in order to meet the general public's expectation of more police officers participating in community activities, officers at each station extend their patrols to all corners of their communities, take part in community security meetings and strengthen cooperation with the general public to establish a comprehensive safety network.

Hypotheses

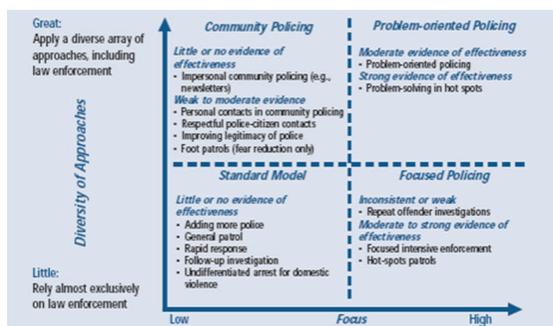
- Decreased social disorder and crime occurrence
- Improved residents' satisfaction toward police and neighborhood safety
- Higher police job satisfaction
- Higher recognition of the program, higher job satisfaction among police



Methods

- Quasi-experimental design: pretest posttest with experimental and comparison police precincts

O_1	X	O_2
O_1		O_2
- **The quantitative assessment:**
 - (1) official data-social disorder, total crime, violent crime, and larceny
 - (2) secondary data (public opinion survey) residents' perceptions toward police and neighborhood safety
 - (3) survey study - police job satisfaction



Results:

Contrast to the comparison area, the COP experimental area had:

less social disorder, less total crime, better crime clearance rates overall, less larceny, higher larceny clearance rates, and greater job satisfaction among police officers.

Unexpected results:

residents' perceptions for police performance and for their own safety (no significant differences between COP area and comparison area)
violent crime occurrences and clearance rates (no differences between two groups).

Possible explanations for unexpected results

- The diffusion effect
 - Security problems can not be identified and focused so that police cannot specifically respond to hot spots, high risk people...
 - the effect is spreading from the experimental area to the control area because of the program marketing.
- The concept of COP is not focused.
 - specific strategies like problem-oriented policing should be involved in COP policing (Gill et al., 2014).

*Thank
You :)*

Reconstruct the Community Fire Policing: Grid Management & Network Governance

Bukui Zhao

Department of Public Security, Tianjin Public Security Police Profession College

Abstract

As china's urbanization construction has accelerated, the situation of fire safety in communities has become grim day by day. In 2012, Ministry of Public Security has launched the grid management of fire safety. As the supervisor of fire safety in communities, the police station has achieved the community fire policing refinement and dynamic management through the advantage of its own organization structure and the police office, combined with the fire safety 3 levels grid. In practice, due to its own limitation, the fire policing grid management exposes some problems such as simplification of administration body, lack of social self-management ability, high cost management. Under the principle of socialization, the community fire policing should uphold the concept of multiple participation and social governance. By introducing the theory of network governance, the "grid + network" community fire safety governance system was formed combining the network governance with grid management. Based on the current social governance environment and the characteristic of the fire control work, we built the "grid + network" community fire policing model including of the government departments...the police station... the social organizations and community citizens. By the studies on the community fire policing are believed to provide beneficial enlightenment for the public security administration reform and the operating mechanism development of law enforcement power.

Key words: Community; Fire policing; Grid management; Network governance

1. Introduction

In recent years, as China's economic development and construction of urban-rural integration have rapidly quickened, the community fire safety has increasingly worsened and the number of fires has continued to increase. From 2010 to 2014, the average number of deaths in the residential compounds of China respectively accounted for 60.4% of the total number of fires in China, as shown in Table 1.

Table1. Number of fire deaths in residential compound

Year	National	Residential areas	Proportion (%)
	Number of Deaths	Number of Deaths	Number of Deaths
2010	1205	717	59.5
2011	1108	589	53.2
2012	1028	622	60.5
2013	2113	1215	57.5
2014	1815	1246	68.7
Average	1454	878	60.4

Source: China Fire Service Yearbook

It is expected that in the years to come, the China's community fire policing will face a double challenge both from the external fire safety environment and the internal fire management system.

On the one hand, China's urbanization gradually accelerated. By 2015, as China had entered a new era of urban society, and the urbanization rate in China had increased from 36.2% in 2000 to 56.1%, with a sharp influx of the floating population, the community policing was not optimistic.

On the other hand, China's fire management mechanism is still a continuation of the "Three Level System" ¹establishment formed in the 1960th last century. Along with the dramatic shift from the "entity-system" to the "community-system" in the Chinese society, the public security police stations in community fire policing have been gradually exposed with the malpractices of imperfect laws and regulations and the lack of professional police force. According to statistics, since 2010, the number of fires that occurred to the entities (places) under the

1 The three level system of fire supervise in China is Police bureau, Police sub-bureau and Police station.

police station’s jurisdiction has remarkably increased, as show in Figure 1.

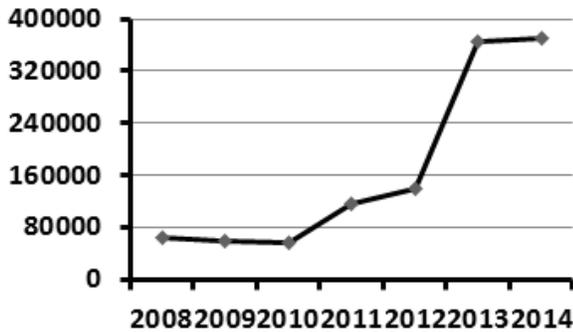


Figure 1. Fire in the entities (places) under the police station’s jurisdiction

In 2011, the Chinese government issued an official document entitled “Opinions of the State Council on Strengthening and Improving the Work of Fire Prevention” (SC-2011-46) pointing out: “the sub-district offices are required to establish fire control organizations with specific personnel in charge, and introduce the fire safety management, with a view to comprehensively improving the fire prevention in communities”.

Since then, the public security organs have step by step applied the “grid management” system to the community fire policing services, creating a “horizontal-vertical” fire safety pattern. However, with the development of the grid management of fire policing, the policing management has gradually been exposed with the problems of single-mode management style and a closed system structure.

In practice, the community fire fighting system not only involves the public security organs but also requires a joint involvement of the relevant governmental agencies and the general public in the system. Therefore, generating logic of the system of grid management is required to be reassessed from the perspective of governance theory with a view to establishing a new community fire policing system by optimizing the management structure of the fire policing and reconstructing its functions.

2. Development and its Limitations of Grid Management of Fire Policing

The concept of “grid” is derived from split of “power grid”. From the perspective of urban management, System of “Grid” is divided based on the size of population and the geographical environment within the urban area in order to

achieve dynamic and precision management by installing grid managers.

2.1 Grid Management of Fire policing

In China, the practice of urban grid management first started with the “10,000-meter-unit grid”² model initiated in Dongcheng District Beijing, which subsequently has continuously been well developed in community security patrol and fire safety within the area of urban security management.

In 2012, the Chinese government issued an official document entitled “Guidance on the Implementation of Grid Management of Fire Safety in Sub-districts”, demanding a division of fire safety management grids made in the charge of sub-district offices in accordance with the principle of territorial management and on community unit basis in an effort to carry out dynamic management of the entities within the grids, places and residential compounds. By the end of 2015, most of the cities in China had established fire safety grid management organizations with specific responsibilities.

A hierarchy of levels of “grid” management is constructed by rebuilding a flat structure for the grid management of fire policing so that the system of fire control responsibility in communities is reified and the mechanism for fire management operation is normalized, and therefore, to a certain extent, the high incidence of community fire situation is alleviated.

On the one hand, obligation and authorization are specified by reifying the managerial hierarchy. The public security organs have established the large, medium and small sized three level grid system on the “sub-district\community\residence” basis, namely fire prevention work offices are established with the sub-districts as the “large grid” in the charge of township administrative leadership, the “medium grid” in the charge of communities, and the “small grid” in the charge of residential compound head appointed by the Residents’ Self Governance Organizations. The division of the “three level grid” had reified the managerial levels within the administrative areas, and specified obligation and authorizations.

On the other hand, grid management hierarchy is integrated with the community policing organization framework to establish the normal fire supervision mechanism. In China, the community policing management system is usually divided into a three

2 The area of urban is divided into a number of grid units with about ten thousand square meters as a basic unit. Dongcheng District has 1652 grid units of 25 square kilometers.

level structure, namely police station area, police district and residential buildings respectively in the charge of head of police stations, community policeman, and head of the residential buildings. The “three level grid” pattern for grid management of fire policing will correspond to director of the police stations, community policeman, and heads of the residential buildings, as shown in Figure 2. As a result, a regulatory responsibility system for “personnel-obligation- obligation area” bundled and corresponding to each other is established to effectively put an end to malfunction and management omissions.

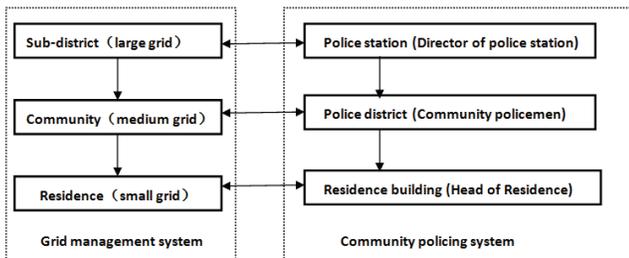


Figure 2. Community policing system & Grid management system

2.2 Limitations of the Grid Management of Fire policing

2.2.1 Closed System Structure of “Grid” Standard Generalization

As the operation of grid policing management mode is based on the division of the unit “grid”, the factors of fire safety environment, organizational relationships and the differences in the size of the police force should be taken into account in the process of the grid within different areas and districts. In practice, however, the system of fire policing “grid” has been separated from each other on the basis of urban regional organization relationship, which has resulted in uneven distribution of fire resources in different “grid” regions.

In addition, the independently closed organization structure of the grid management system has resulted in lack of effective communication and inability to share the resources among the “grids”, and the rigid operating mechanism in the grid system has led to a presentation of the dissipative structure of fire policing in the regional environment.

2.2.2 Higher Cost of Policing Grid Management

During the process of grid management of fire policing, as the public security organs are obligated to undertake assignment of planning, organization and coordination, only relying on adequate police force can they carry out the dynamic management and control over the “grid”.

At present, China has more than fifty thousand police stations with a total number of two million police officers including the police officers working in the police stations, accounting for less than 40% of the total number of the police officers, the overall distribution of police force presenting an “inverted triangle”. Under the current normal circumstances of “no growth’ or “minor growth” uniform configuration of the police force is carried out in accordance with the criterion of “one police officer one grid (community grid)”³, averagely with one police officer in charge of 3,000 residents.

In this case, only by increasing financial expenditure can the government in many areas recruit auxiliary policeman to ease the contradiction of the shortage of police force, virtually raising the cost of the grid management.

2.2.3 Lack of Long Effective policing Operation Mechanism in Grid System

Although the grid management of fire policing has specified the division standards of a “three level grid,” it lacks refinement of the policing operation mechanism in a grid, and ignores the multi cooperation in the grid system. As a product of the administrative system, the grid management of fire policing is dyed with an administrative color.

Affected by the police force structure of the bureaucratic system, the public security organs in the daily policing affairs still use the traditional policing management model, heavy supervision, inspection and law enforcement have caused the excessive extrusion of social resources in the grid system, resulting in fragmentation of a variety of social organizations, the district entities and the public relations, which not only not only affects the optimization of the grid resources, but also reduces the efficiency of the fire policing operation.

3. Reflection on a Transition from Grid Management to Network Governance

As socialization of fire protection is deemed to be the guidelines for fire protection in China,

³ According to the Ministry of public security “Standardization of the police station construction”(2007)

“Fire Services law” clearly stated that socialized fire fighting network should be established and perfected among “government”, “departments”, “entities” and “citizens” which calls for a transition from a centralized “top-bottom” grid management to a pluralistic model of “bottom-top” network governance.

3.1 Choices of Network Governance Theory

As initiators of the network governance theory by Stephen Goldsmith and William D. Eggers(2004). Under the background of governance theory researches, the network governance has extended the analytical framework of the state-society relationship, and the theory has overcome the lack of a clear analysis framework of governance theory, such as lack of operability and so on, adhering to the concept of governance of multiple participation and decentralization, and presenting the practice of the theory.

The government in the network governance is to organize and coordinate all kinds of resources to create public value; the role of the government is no longer a direct provider of public services, but as a facilitator for public values; and the government should play a role in the relational network composed among government agencies, organizations and entities.

In analytic hierarchy process, the relevant researches on the network governance can be divided into the macro-level (environmental elements: economy, politics, and culture), the median-level (embedding factors: operational mechanism), and the micro-level(endogenous variable: structure type). At the micro level, research on community fire policing mode is emphasized on solving the problem of grid policing operation and the network structure type in the research at the micro-level is the core problem, which is also a focal issue in network governance.

In order to achieve the target of fire policing in the grid system, It is necessary to integrate and optimize the allocation of fire service resources in the perspective of network governance and construct the governance structure which is suitable for our country’s social management environment and to specify the grid system and meet the needs of fire control work.

3.2 Dialectical Relationship between Grid Management and Network Governance

In the development process of the grid management of fire policing, the network governance undoubtedly has provided a better

choice on how to build a horizontal partnership among the government, market and citizen participation in the “grid” system. Seen from the dialectical view, the shift of fire policing from the grid management to the network governance cannot be simplified as a mere substitution. It is neither a total denial of the grid management, nor a copy of the network governance, it is a full integration of grid management of fire fighting with the concept of the network governance.

On the one hand, the concept of the network governance should be introduced into the process of the grid management. At present, the key to perplexing the development of the grid management of the fire service is how to reduce the extrusion of the administrative power to the main body of the social governance, and to release the vitality of the multi interaction in the grid system. The concept of multi participation and decentralized governance emphasized by the grid management turned the governmental agencies from a manager to a service provider, who cannot only build the path of resource sharing in grid system, but also cultivate and guide the development of civil society.

On the other hand, grid management is required to provide an implementation guarantee in the process of network governance. In the environment when our country’s social autonomic governance is relatively vulnerable, as fire control work is an important component of the social public security system, considerable work in the field of public security system should be carried out, step by step, also need to be implemented gradually under the guidance or control by the government. Flat management organization structure adopted by grid management is helpful for the public security organs to gradually form a communication, exchanges and cooperation mechanism with various social governance subjects on the network basis, progressively exploring and improving the community fire policing.

4. Construction the “Grid + Network” Fire Policing Governance in the Community

Structural functionalism proposes that the structure determines the function, the selection of structure directly restricts the exertion of the function, and the model is the external performance of the structure. By way of grid management and full combination with the concept of network governance, the effective system connection and operation mechanism is constructed between the two to form a new type of community fire policing mode, which is “grid” and “network”.

4.1 Relationship between the Governance Structures of “Grid” and “Network”

The community fire policing governance structure of “grid + network”, on the one hand, refers to the mechanism of regional resource sharing through the network connection grid, on the other hand, to the governance model which is based on the network to build a diversified participation in the grid.

4.1.1 Relationship between “Grid” Unit and the Network Governance Structure

In the relationship between a “grid” unit and the network governance structure, “grid” and “network” show the relationship or proportions of parts to the whole. “Grid” is equivalent to “part”, and “network” is equivalent to “the whole”. The “grid” unit is connected with each other through the network, which makes an integral whole in the network environment, as shown in Figure 3.

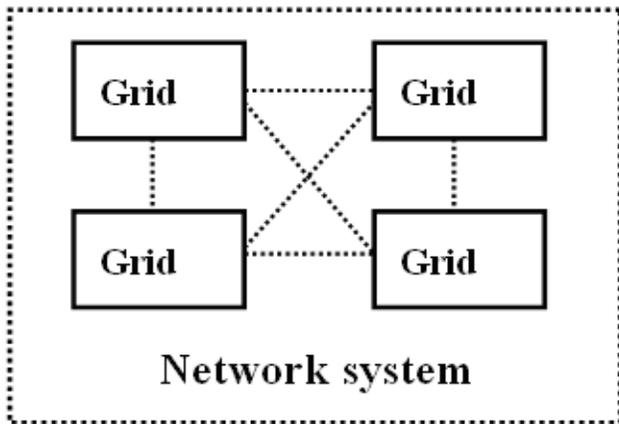


Figure 3. The network structure among the grids

By using information management methods, the public security organs establish a network of information connection and resource sharing mechanism, breaking the closed environment between the grid units in the work of community fire policing. In practice, fire culture construction or fire volunteer service development is better in some of the communities, and the public security organ can guide the establishment of collaborative sharing mechanism between adjacent grids, and by using different “grid” advantage resources in the system promote grid system to generate polarization effect.

4.1.2 The Relationship between a “Grid” Unit and the Network Governance Structure

The interaction between a “Grid” unit and the network governance structure features a relationship of “embracing” and “embraced”. By establishing a

network governance structure within a “grid” unit, the resource allocation in a grid is optimized. A “grid” reflects the function and the role through the “network” and forms a governance system of a “grid” embracing the “network”, as shown in Figure 4.

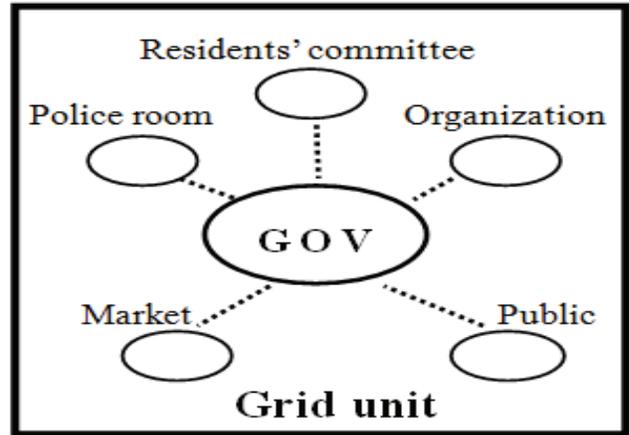


Figure 4. The network structure within a grid

In practice, the public belonging property makes the multiple participation and co governance a problem that cannot be avoided. The public security organs should abandon the traditional way of policing work and, by constructing a locally adapted network governance structure, expand the path of government, community, market and public in their participation in the fire control work, and specify the right to operate the governance and improve the efficiency of the fire policing within a grid.

4.2 Network Governance Structure within a Community Grid

In the system of the fire policing grid management, the sub-district grid (the large grid) is composed of a number of community grids (medium grids) to reflect its functions through a community grid (a medium grid), and not contain too much governance resources as it is restricted by its environment within a residential compound (a small grid). Therefore, the community grid (a medium grid) is undoubtedly the core link among the “three level grids” in the system.

4.2.1 The Choice of the Network Model in a Community Grid

Presently, the social governance environment in China has two basic features: First, under the leadership of the government, in the current social environment, the government is still the main driving force of the development of social transformation and planners, all aspects of the

work cannot be done without the support of the government. Second, as the social autonomy power is weak, although the civil society and market organizations have developed, their strength is still weak, the ability to undertake the transfer of government functions is restricted, it is difficult to independently carry out autonomous work.

In contrast, firstly, the fire control work has the public safety property that the government has always regarded fire control work as an important duty of their own. Secondly, the fire control work has the public belonging property that both the public organizations and the government have a common demand for fire safety, which makes value characteristics of good cooperation in the fire control management.

Therefore, Provan K G and Kenis P (2005) introduced three models for network-model governance on the basis of the four factors from the network participants, the target identification, trust level and action ability. They are: Government dominated model, Cooperative model and Self-governing model. On the basis of the current social governance environment and fire policing needs, in this research, the author has selected the government dominated model to be constructed, which is suitable for the majority of the social ecological environment in China.

The government dominated model is a kind of governance structure in the network environment which is led by the executive power, the government departments not only need to assume the communication and coordination tasks for the principle governing bodies but should also bear the resulting network governance costs and responsibilities. The most favorable advantage of the model is that the model will not only embrace the fire control work into the dominant control of the government but can also measurably carry out a multi cooperation governance under the control of the government. The structure of the model can be seen as a “point-to-multipoint” model as shown in Figure 5.

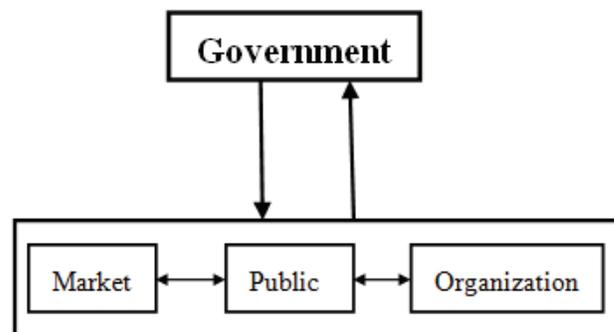


Figure 5. The government dominated model

4.2.2 Fire Control Network Structure of Government Dominated Model

In the government dominated fire control network governance, in the horizontal direction, is based on a multiple governance pattern within the framework of the community grids (a medium grid). Under the network governance, grid management can not only optimize the allocation of resources, improve the efficiency of grid management, but also can prevent the excessive extrusion of social space, and create space for social organizations, as shown in Figure 6.

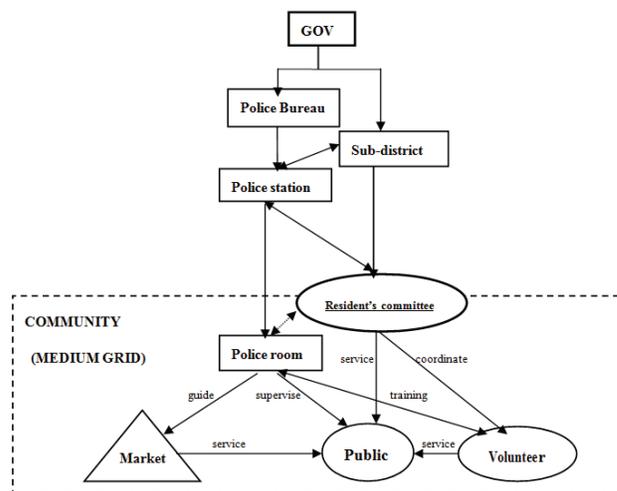


Figure 6. Model of fire control network in a community grid

As the governmental departments are the governors of the government dominated fire control network, Government departments for the government leading type fire management network management, their main responsibility is to determine the operation mechanism and rules of the fire control network, standardize the

access standards of the participating subjects, and the distribution of the rights of each subject in the network.

The residents' committee, as autonomous organizations of community residents and an integrator of the network operation, should specify the duties of the fire protection personnel, and actively coordinate the various main governance bodies to maintain the fire safety in the work.

Police stations in the network system of fire control play the role of the most special and critical, because in the fire policing, the police station perform a role of supervision and law enforcement and fulfill the role of publicity and education services, and the key point is that the police station is the only law enforcement body involved in the community fire control work, and is responsible for the entire network of fire safety basic protection.

4.3 The Operational Mechanism of the Community Fire Policing

In the process of operation of the community fire policing model, police stations are constructed with a view to serving bureaucratic hierarchy, both in the policing management to the police force system, and, in the actual work, coordinate the conflict between the old hierarchy and the "grid + network" governance structure, through the establishment of the communication and cooperation of the police operation mechanism to strengthen the "grid + network" governance structure cohesion.

4.3.1 Promoting Governance Subject to Improve the Interaction Mechanism

The police stations, as the main body of community fire control system, should actively promote the exchanges among the various subjects, and enhance the coherence of the "grid + network" governance structure in the two aspects from "public-public" to "public-private".

On the one hand, the police stations should promote the operation of the network in vertical direction by breaking the phenomenon of government "vertical tyrannical weak" on the basis of "public-public" cooperation. The police stations not only have to actively promote the party committees and governments at higher levels and also, through the higher level party committee and government, regulate all sectors and every department in charge in their industry-originated management of the fire safety of each industry unit in the area. At the same time, the police stations should also actively promote the grassroots government and, by relying on the sub-district offices

to coordinate the relevant governance subjects, such as safety supervision agencies, comprehensive management departments and other government departments, jointly do a good job in the area of fire safety work.

On the other hand, the police stations should be courageous in exploring the "public-private" pattern cooperation and strengthening the horizontal cooperation with the network. The police stations should enhance their cooperation with the residents' committees under their administration, by using their dominant position, establish a partnership of interest with the community entities and the public, by means of security interest and fire services outsourcing, jointly safeguard the fire safety.

4.3.2 Giving Full Play to the "Stage" Role of Police Office

The police office, as a police agency set up by the public security organs, embodies the basic functions of the service and socialization of community policing, and is the "stage" for exchange and interaction in the community "grid".

On the one hand, the public security organs should make the police office a "stage" for the cooperation of community police affairs." The police officers, with police office as a bridge, jointly participate in fire control propaganda, fire prevention patrol, or elimination of fire hazards to make the public aware that they are not only the enjoyers but also the providers of the community safety to enhance the sense of community belonging.

On the other hand, the police office should also become the "stage" for fire control culture propaganda. Common culture and values have positive effect on the cooperation among different governance subjects. Police officers should the office offer fire propaganda to satisfy the needs of the public to understand the work of fire fighting. In addition, the police can also reflect the community's fire safety hazards through the police office and create a harmonious fire safety environment by using the public interest demands.

4.3.3 Nurturing and Guiding the Community Fire Volunteer Organizations

In recent years, China's residential fire deaths accounted for nearly 70% of the total. Many of the fires have not been effectively controlled at the initial stage, which were exposed with the problems of China's current lack of fire rescue forces. Since 2015, many cities in the society have established miniature fire stations which, as the community volunteer organizations, are normally composed

of community security officers, grid administrators and community public.

The community miniature fire stations implement a 24 hour-duty shift, with three officers for each shift, which effectively ensures rescue forces formed within 3 minutes after a fire. During their work, public security organs should set up miniature fire stations and, by relying on police officers, through fire training and drilling, guide community volunteers to participate in miniature fire station construction, with a view to creating an integrated model of police office and miniature fire stations.

Moreover, the police organs should exploit the advantages of the “grid + network” governance system to the full, establish a regional linkage mechanism among the system adjacent grids, and project the fire volunteer service within the grid unit over the whole country. The miniature fire stations, as volunteer fire organizations, can promote mutual cooperation and mutual trust, and expand the depth and breadth and validity in communities.

5. Conclusion

At present, China is experiencing the modernization transition period, economic and social forces are continuously developing, and a diversified fire fighting governance pattern composed of the government, market, social organizations and citizens is initially emerging. In a sense, policing governance modernization is a process of structural differentiation and functional reconstruction of the policing affairs, which will result in construction of a new policing model suitable for China’s historical, social and ecological environment, reflecting the philosophy of “limited police force and infinite resources of the people”.

In practice, a variety of policing services covers a variety of specific governance models. In the research, the author introduces the theory of network governance into the grid management of fire policing, building a pattern of “grid + network” for community fire policing. The position and responsibility of the public security organs in the community fire service are clarified through the perspective of “grid + network”, and the new ideas and models of community fire policing are analyzed.

Nevertheless, the social attribute of policing affairs determines the characteristics of its complex social systems, the “grid + network” policing and the combination of its theory with practice should be, on the basis of time variables, quantitatively analyzed and dynamically researched through empirical testing, with a view to constantly correcting the

actual effect of the operation of the policing affairs and discovering the best model for community fire policing in China.

References

- Burt R S. Structural Holes [M]. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1992.
- Chen Zhenming. On the New Public Management Paradigm in the West [J], *Social Sciences in China Press*, 2000, (6):74.
- Chen Beibei. Study on Multi Subject Participation of Community Policing Management [J]. *East China University of Science and Technology*, 2013:3.
- Chen Rongzhuo, Xiao Dandan. From Grid Management to Network Governance [J]. *Socialism Science*, 2015(4):83-89.
- Fan Pingan, Fire Grim Refinement Management in Henan Province[J]. *Fire Science and Technology*, 2012, 31(11).
- Goldsmith. Stephen, William D. Eggers. *Governing by Network: The New Shape of the Public Sector* [M]. Brookings Institution Press, 2004.
- Guo Chunfu. Community Public Security Network: Structure, Process and Performance [J]. *China Social Sciences Press*, 2013:3.
- Liu Bo, Li Na. *Network Governance: Theory and Practice of Chinese Local Government*. TSINGHUA University Press, 2014:38.
- Liu Bin, Zheng Yanqiong. Research on Grid-based Fire Protection System[J]. *Journal of Yunnan Police Officer Academy*,2011(4):7-11.
- Liu Jiajie. Community Grid Policing Management in China and Its Advancement [J]. *Public Security Theory and Practice*,2016(1):101-107.
- Lu Chunxiao. To Improve the Governance of Shanghai City Community Governance Practice Cases [J]. *Shanghai Wenhui Press*, 2014:5
- Luo Guanghua. The Innovation of Social Management Model of Urban Primary Level- a case study of the new round of social management innovation in Guangzhou [J]. *WUHAN University*, 2011:12.
- Niemi A. Will networks and hierarchies ever meet[C]. *Governing Networks Amsterdam:IOS Press*,2003.
- Proven K G, Kenis P. Modes of Network Governance: Structure Management and Effectiveness[J]. *Journal of Public Administration Research and Theory*, 2008, 18(2): 229-252.
- Proven K G, Kenis P. Modes of Network Governance and implications for public network management[J]. *Los Angeles: The*

-
- English National Public Management Research Conference, 2005.
- Proven K G, Milward H B. A preliminary theory of inter organizational network effectiveness: a comparative study of four community mental health systems[J]. *Administration Science Quarterly*, 1995, 40:1-33.
- Qi Yanjin. Accelerate the Construction of Fire Control System and Governance Capacity [N], *China Police Daily (Fire Weekly)*, 2014-6-16(3).
- Rui Guoqiang, Guo Fwngqi. Regional Public Management Model: Theoretical and Structural Elements [J]. *JIANGHAI Academy Journal*. 2006 (5):211-239.
- Siu W, Qiong Bao. Network strategies of small Chinese high-technology firms: a qualitative study [J]. *Journal of Product Innovation Management*, 2008, 25:79-102.
- Tang Huangfeng. Social Transformation and Organizational Control: A Study on the Comprehensive Management of Social Security in China [J]. *Fudan University*, 2006:4
- Wang Weihong. The Role of Grid in Social Fire Safety Management [J]. *Fire Science and Technology*, 2012, 31(8).
- Yang Yusheng. Research on the Improvement of Community Governance[J]. *Social Sciences Academic Press (CHINA)*, 2014:3.
- Yang Haitao. The Research and Expectation on Urban Community Grid Management [D]. *Jilin University China*, 2014, 6.

Research on the Innovation of Social Safety Governance and Policing Modes under the Neighborhoods System

XUE Xiangjun

Abstract

The implementation of neighborhoods system in our country will bring new opportunities and challenges to the social safety governance as well as the police work. Governments and relevant departments should update their ideas, blend safety concepts into the planning and design of city blocks, step up efforts in supervising the traffic safety and security of the neighborhoods, push forward the application of technical precautions to build smart neighborhoods, develop a “multi-center” supply mode of neighborhood security by encouraging the market, social organizations and residents to participate in the process of neighborhood security governance and decision-making. Public security organs should deploy their resources rationally and move the police work forward, vigorously promote their ability level by innovating policing patterns and strategies to respond to and prevent crimes.

Key words: Neighborhoods system, CPTED, Public security, Policing pattern, Polycentric supply of safety

This February, the CPC Central Committee and the State Council issued “*Several opinions on further strengthening the management of urban planning and construction*”(hereinafter referred to as the “*Opinions*”), clearly putting forward that “neighborhoods system should be popularized in newly-built residential complex. Closed residential areas will not be constructed any longer in principle. Those residential areas and unit compounds which have already been built should be opened gradually to realize the publicity of their internal roads, solve the layout problem of traffic networks, promote the economical use of the land” and the development of livable neighborhoods which are “more open and convenient, with appropriate size, perfect supporting facilities and harmonious neighbors”, thus pointed out the direction and goals for the development of our city neighborhoods. At present, urbanization is the basic trend of the urban and rural social development in our country. Most of the domestic cities are being in or will successively enter into the peak stage of the old city reconstruction and new city construction, which provides a good opportunity for the trial implementation and promotion of neighborhoods system. Predictably, the implementation of neighborhoods system will bring certain impact and challenges to our social safety governance and the current policing modes. This paper introduces the experience of the European and American countries in responding to the problem of neighborhood safety governance, on the basis of which, it explores the feasible countermeasures suitable for our national conditions.

Hidden Troubles brought by the Promotion of Neighborhoods System

Neighborhood refers to a set of buildings and the surrounding squares, streets, parks and green space, which not only has traffic function, but is a place where residents can stay, rest, communicate with each other and entertain themselves. The biggest advantage of implementing neighborhoods system lies in that small-sized neighborhood with a dense road network can enhance the overall utilization rate of public-shared space, make city life more convenient and traffic circulation unobstructed. The revival of neighborhoods system is the result of evolution of the western urban planning concepts. After the second world war, the acceleration of the process of urbanization in European and American countries brought many serious “city diseases” to these countries, such as environmental pollution, traffic jams, decrease of agricultural land on the edge of big cities, expansion of commuting time and distance, increase of energy consumption, etc.

To solve these problems, Ms. Jane Jacobs published *The Death and Life of Great American Cities* in 1961, put forward that New York city should implement the idea of “small streets, small community”, which was the origin of the western “new urbanism”. In 1993, the first conference on new urbanism was held in Alexandria, USA, marking the formal establishment of new urbanism movement and the maturity of its theory system. New urbanism advocates drawing lessons from

the fine tradition of American small town planning before the second world war, replacing the developing mode of suburban sprawl with compact neighborhoods with town life atmosphere. *The Charter of the New Urbanism* formed on the 4th CNU in 1996 fully introduces this planning concept, that is, neighborhoods should be diverse in use and population; communities should be designed for the pedestrian and transit as well as the car; cities and towns should be shaped by physically defined and universally accessible public spaces and community institutions; urban places should be framed by architecture and landscape design that celebrate local history, climate, ecology, and building practice (<http://architecture.about.com/od/communitydesign/a/urbanismchart.>).

Under the influence of New Urbanism, many European and American countries started New Urbanism design movement, with neighborhood projects increasing year by year. According to statistics, there were 648 neighborhood projects in USA during 2004, increased by 37% over 2003 (CHEN Cai, 2016). With the increasingly prominent advantages neighborhoods have in road traffic and environmental function optimization, neighborhoods system has become an established practice of residential areas construction and management in many countries around the world.

In recent years, there are also some outstanding problems existing in urban planning and construction management in our country. First, the lack of foresight in urban planning and the absence of characteristics in urban architectures make it a particular concern to inherit our culture. Second, the blind pursuit of scale expansion in urban construction makes a low space utilization rate as well as severe waste of public resources. Third, unsound legal system and insufficient supply of public products and services cause the deterioration of many "city diseases". Fourth, large-scale closed areas and compounds not only block the "microcirculation" of the city, but make its operational efficiency decline, which is not conducive to the formation of community cohesion and collective efficacy. Nowadays, since open space becomes an important indicator of urban modernization, inner conflict and contradiction between the closure of a closed community and the openness of a modern city has been increasingly highlighted. The promotion of neighborhoods system regulated by the *"Opinions"* is to break the present situation of urban planning by integrating residential communities into street networks and to form open communities. This is a breakthrough both of urban planning concept and of people's way of life, which

will certainly play an important role in optimizing the layout between urban and rural areas, perfect urban functions, and improve the well-being of people's livelihood.

After the issue of the *"Opinions"*, the conception of neighborhoods system and the way to carry it out rapidly drew the attention of the whole society and attracted extensive discussions. Objectively speaking, Implementation of neighborhoods system can change many areas within residential quarters into public places which may lead to health problems as well as legal disputes about community property rights and bring danger and noise pollution to the residents, but the biggest concern is the hidden troubles it brought to social safety. According to the survey, among those respondents not in favor of opening residential communities, as much as 90.4% worried about the resulting security problems. When being asked what kinds of supporting measures would influence the public's attitudes to opening communities, 85.33% respondents chose those of public security (WU Xiaolin, 2016). Thus, how to ensure safety and order of the society, make people live and work in peace and contentment, while pushing through the neighborhoods system, has become an important issue for the governments and relevant departments to consider.

Experience of European and American Countries in Implementing Neighborhoods Safety Management

The development of neighborhoods system is relatively mature and perfect in European and American countries. In the process of promoting this system, some countries adopted targeted crime prevention countermeasures during different stages of neighborhoods planning and design and coming into use, to combat the threat of hidden security dangers caused by it.

During the stage of neighborhood planning and design, European and American countries generally advocate the concept of Crime Prevention through Environmental Design (hereinafter referred to as CPTED), namely, to reduce or eliminate crime opportunities by using elements of the environment to control access, provide opportunities to see and be seen, define ownership and encourage the maintenance of territory. This concept emerged out of research on the relationship between crime and place, theories known variously as environmental criminology, situational prevention, rational choice theory, or routine activities theory, among others. Each theoretical approach focuses on the crime event and how a criminal offender understands

and uses the environment to commit a crime. The research reveals that, crime is specific and situational, the distribution of crimes is related to land use and transportation networks, offenders are opportunistic and commit crimes in places they know well, opportunity arises out of daily routines and activities, places with crime are often also places without observers or guardians. Based on the above theories, CPTED attempts to remove or reduce crime opportunities by changing various aspects of the building, the site, the location, and how that place is used. These changes are directed toward three basic objectives (Diane Zahm):

1. *Control access by creating both real and perceptual barriers to entry and movement*, such as using fences, tree lines or hedges to define boundaries, using drives, sidewalks, paths, and gardens to guide sphere of activities, etc.

2. *Take advantage of design to provide opportunities to see and be seen*, such as using lighting to improve the ability to observe activity, using building location and orientation to create or remove views, using furniture arrangements, window treatments and other interior design elements to support observation and encourage guardianship, etc.

3. *Use design to define ownership and encourage maintenance of territories*, such as using fences, hedges, or planter boxes to separate spaces, using changes in elevation or variations in paving materials to define transitions from public to private spaces, using signs to establish ownership and any limits on use buildings, using clean and well-maintained buildings, yards, and sidewalks to show signs of guardianship, etc.

CPTED currently has been widely applied in practice. For example, the British "Security by Design" program carried out in 1989 was a group of national police projects focusing on the design and security for new and refurbished homes, commercial premises and car parks as well as the acknowledgement of quality security products and crime prevention projects. Now it has been proved that the principles of 'designing out crime' used by this program can reduce the risk of crime and fear of crime(<http://www.securedbydesign.com/>). In 1997, the American city Tempe approved the CPTED ordinance, authorizing the police to evaluate crime prevention plans of construction projects and forcibly terminate those which do not meet CPTED specifications, and received a very good crime prevention effects (LI Chunlei, 2011).

After the neighborhoods' coming into use, the common strategies used by European and American

countries to prevent crimes include neighborhood watch, property-marking, home security surveys, and installation and use of video monitoring system, etc. Neighborhood watch is supposed to reduce crime through the following mechanisms:

1. *Residents looking out for and reporting suspicious activities to the police*. On the one hand, visible surveillance might reduce crime because of its deterrent effect on the perceptions and decision-making of potential offenders. Hence, watching and reporting might deter offenders if they are aware of the likelihood of local residents reporting suspicious behavior and if they perceive this as increasing their risks of being caught. On the other hand, It is also possible that neighborhood watch programs might reduce crime by enhancing police detection through increased flow of useful information from the public to the police, which might lead to a greater number of arrests and convictions and result in a reduction in crime.

2. *Creation of signs of occupancy*, such as removing newspapers from outside neighbors' homes when they are away, mowing the lawn, and filling up trash cans. Such signs of occupancy might reduce crime through the effect this has on potential offenders' perceptions of the likelihood of their getting caught.

3. *using various formal and informal mechanisms of social control*, such as increasing patrol frequency, generating acceptable codes of behavior, holding youth education plan, providing victim support services, or direct intervention by residents. These mechanisms might indirectly serve to enhance community cohesion and increase the ability of communities to control crime(Holloway, Bennett, & Farrington)

Property marking makes the disposal of property more difficult, and potential offenders could view marked property as increasing the risk of detection. In general, the success of this strategy depends on such factors as how many second-hand shops and pawn shops are involved, how many people mark their properties, and how quickly the lists of updated stolen goods are distributed to different stores. Home security surveys is another method used to deal with hidden dangers caused by neighborhoods system, which might lead to a reduction in crime by installation of residential security alarm systems and making it physically more difficult for an offender to enter the property.

In addition, European and American countries also commonly use video monitoring technology to solve the challenges neighborhoods system brings to social safety governance, and determine

numbers and installation positions of cameras by using GIS technology to explore crime patterns, in order to realize the maximization of monitoring effect. This crime prevention measure is mainly based on rational choice theory and situational crime prevention concept, both of which consider that potential offenders make purposeful, rational decisions to commit crimes after weighing the potential costs and benefits of the crime in question. Video surveillance systems can also enhance criminal justice system efficiency. They can alert police of crimes and potentially dangerous situations as they occur, providing crucial information that can help police determine the safest, most effective response. Video footage documenting crimes that transpired and identifying perpetrators and witnesses may aid in investigations.

Thoughts on Countermeasures of Innovating Social Safety Governance and Policing Modes under Neighborhoods System

Given that the implementation of neighborhoods system may encounter various resistance and challenges, especially in terms of social safety, governments and relevant departments should update ideas, coordinate different relations, and steadily promote the system. Public security organs should actively learn from relevant experience of European and American countries, innovate social safety governance and policing mode, and create a sound environment for the implementation of neighborhoods system.

Governments should plan scientifically, enhance supervision on neighborhoods traffic safety and social security, promote the application of technical precautions to build smart neighborhoods, effectively enhance the overall control of social order.

First of all, to solve the problem of increased complexity of management after the opening of neighborhoods, governments should further clarify rights and responsibilities of city competent departments, push down the focus of law enforcement and promote localized management of relevant matters, implement service liability at the street level, strengthen the core leading role of neighborhood party organizations as well as the construction of law enforcement agencies and teams to manage the neighborhoods, improve the level of service, management and law enforcement, and strive to achieve a benign interaction among governance, social adjustment and residents autonomy. Secondly, to solve the problem of traffic congestion and safety caused by the opening of

neighborhoods, traffic administrative departments should strengthen planning management and improve traffic condition. When opening the roads in closed residential communities, various measures can be used to limit and regulate the use of these roads, such as adopting one-way access, or limiting traffic flow or driving speed, etc. To ensure the security of the elderly and children, such measures as setting deceleration strip, improving traffic light system to prolong the time pedestrians passing through, can improve road safety. In the newly-developed urban area, Transit-oriented Development mode should be encouraged to optimize urban layout. On the one hand, try to optimize bus routes, set up rapid transit lines, install bus priority signal lights, on the other hand, strengthen the construction of bicycle lanes and footpaths, reduce our dependence on cars. Third, to solve the problem of inefficient municipal public service and chaotic neighborhoods management, governments should complete public facilities, strengthen the digital construction of different administrative platforms, promote the level of neighborhood intelligent service, especially that of public security service, by adopting such technical precautions as reasonably installing lighting equipment and public surveillance system, strengthening daylight design of underground space, etc., to effectively relieve the negative impact neighborhoods system may bring to the social order.

Since physical design is the key to prevent neighborhood crimes, city planning departments and home builders should integrate safety concept into neighborhood planning and design to reduce crime and disorder from the source.

At present, in our country, the general concept of crime prevention and control is seldom considered in planning the overall layout and functions of residential areas during the stage of urban planning and architectural design. Though the 1991 *provisional regulations on strengthening safety precautions in residential construction design*, issued jointly by the Ministry of Construction and the Ministry of Public Security, put forward some requirements on the safety standards of building design, it was more out of fire prevention and seismic consideration, involved only the basic safety standards of architectural design such as door locks, building materials, walls, etc., without an overall space security prevention and control planning. The 1996 *Regulations on the Construction and Management of Urban Residents' Housing Security Infrastructure* also did not involve the overall planning and design of residential environment.

Since the above departmental regulations cannot adapt the residential security demands brought by neighborhoods system, we can draw lessons from those advanced ideas of European and American countries, encourage city planning departments and home builders to adopt CPTED theory in neighborhood planning and design. When planning the public space of neighborhoods, for example, we can create semi-private yards by setting hedges or fences to limit strangers' access, create semi-public space by setting such symbolic barriers as flower beds or lawns and increase residents' territoriality so as to prevent signs of neighborhoods decay and disorder, form natural surveillance through the interpenetrating of various environmental elements and activities of residents to deter potential criminals. When conditions permitting, timely introduce design standards and related policy laws and regulations according with CPTED concept to provide more operational guidelines and ensure more construction projects to be built or rebuilt in accordance with CPTED standards. Furthermore, public security organs should be encouraged to participate in urban planning and architectural design, give professional suggestions from the perspective of crime control and prevention, examine and approve construction blueprints.

Public Security Organs should innovate policing modes and reasonably deploy their resources to move forward the focus of policing and promote the ability to crack down on street crimes.

The implementation of neighborhoods system will undoubtedly make it possible for the police to guard against the increase of all kinds of street crimes, and bring more pressure to the job of traffic police, patrolmen, community police, and even criminal police. As the main power in the fight against illegal criminal activities, public security organs should have the courage to break through the limitations of traditional policing model, update their ideas, and actively respond to all kinds of potential safety hazard brought by neighborhoods system to the society. They should innovate the mode of community policing, get information from the basic level, try their best to mobilize and organize community resources into social safety governance, realize the combination of community policing and community autonomy gradually. They should insist on problem-oriented train of thought, shift their concerned objects from a single case or event or a single criminal to some sort of social disorder problems or crimes, work out effective solutions by analyzing different factors influencing street order to solve various social safety problems from the source.

They can draw lessons from the western third-party policing concept, using all kinds of civil, criminal laws and regulations, persuade or force relevant government departments, social organizations, regulators, and other third-party organizations or personnel (such as owners, parents, health care and building inspectors, etc.) to bear responsibilities of crime prevention within their respective scope. They can try hotspots policing, using geographic information technology and crime mapping methods to identify crime hotspots, which can be a building or address, a street or street section, or address groups, block or street section groups, and focus their limited resources on these crime hot spots, so as to maximize police efficiency. They can also implement predictive policing, widely collect all kinds of street crime statistics and environmental statistics, using big data analysis technology to predict possible locations, suspects, and vulnerable groups of potential crimes, and on the basis of which, reasonably deploy police resources and innovate their operational mechanisms to achieve their ultimate goal of social stability.

Governments should develop a "multi-center" supply mode to ensure neighborhood safety, encouraging the market, social organizations and residents to participate in neighborhood safety governance and decision making to enhance their ability of crime prevention.

In contemporary society, the existence of risks promotes a responsabilized form of self-government. With the responsibility of risk management shifting from the government to individuals, the latter must be liable for the consequences of their own risky decisions (Garland, 1996). The focuses of Penology also shift from such concepts as guilt, individual criminal responsibility, diagnosis, intervention and treatment, to various skills of identifying, classifying, and managing different organizations according to their dangerous degrees. Correspondingly, intervention measures change from clarifying responsibility, finding and transforming individual criminals to managing and regulating risky people or location, identifying and capturing dangerous groups (Feeley & Simon, 1994). These trends make the focus of crime control and policing change from the state's being responsible for crime prevention and correction to the crime control and prevention network's being responsible for risk identification and management, with the police being one of the nodes on the network, and private security guides, insurance companies, regulators, communities, schools, parents being the others. With the increase of risk factors of public safety

caused by implementation of neighborhoods system, governments should vigorously develop a “multi-center” supply mode, actively mobilize the market, social organizations and residents to participate in neighborhood safety management and decision making, to offset the negative influence of insufficient police resources in our country. They should encourage residents to carry out neighborhood watch, organize patrol forces, work closely with community police, conduct various neighborhood activities to increase visitors flow rate and eliminate the hidden security dangers. They can improve social organizations such as residential committees, provide information, consulting and training services to help citizens participate in neighborhoods construction, give full play to their autonomy ability and build sustainable neighborhoods. They should standardize the management of security companies and the production and sales of various security products, call on citizens to take measures to protect their own property and privacy, and provide them targeted professional advice and help.

It must be realized that safety can only be obtained by establishing safety environment and awareness in the whole society. Safety is not only related to technology, but also to social security level, citizen’s legal consciousness and civilization. Cultivating citizen consciousness, neighborhood relationship, and cooperating ethos will eliminate a lot of potential safety problems and achieve the best crime prevention effect.

References

- <http://architecture.about.com/od/communitydesign/a/urbanismchart>.
- CHEN Cai, The Way European and American Countries Develop Neighborhoods System, *Study Times*, March 31, 2016.
- WU Xiaolin, Policy Transformation from Closed Residential Communities to Neighborhoods System, *Jiangnan Forum*, 2016(5).
- Diane Zahm, *Using Crime Prevention Through Environmental Design in Problem-Solving*, <http://www.cops.usdoj.gov/>
- <http://www.securedbydesign.com/>
- LI Chunlei, New Exploration in Crime Prevention through Environmental Design, *Legal Daily*, Sept. 22, 2011.
- Katy Holloway, Trevor Bennett, & David P. Farrington, *Does Neighborhood Watch Reduce Crime?* <http://www.cops.usdoj.gov/>
- Garland, D. (1996). The limits of the sovereign state. *British Journal of Criminology*, 36, 452–455.
- Feeley, M. and Simon, J. (1994). Actuarial justice: The emerging new criminal law. In D. Nelken (ed.), *The futures of criminology* (pp. 173–201). London: Sage Publications. 173.

The Effect of Community Policing: Does the Community Policing Program have a Positive Effect on Citizen Participants' Ratings of the Police?

Jae-Seung Lee

Sam Houston State University

ABSTRACT

Community policing (COP) has been a dominant policing strategy worldwide during past three decades. Along with this popularity, scholars have examined the effectiveness of COP. While a majority of studies largely focused on the relationships between its implementation and overall crime rates or general public ratings of the police, the effect of COP programs on citizen participants' ratings of the police is relatively unknown. Previous literature consistently reported that citizen participants of COP programs have more favorable attitudes toward the police than non-participants. However, the causal relationship between participation and the favorable attitudes has not identified yet. Using the two waves of surveys collected from over 900 citizen participants of the monthly based police-community communication meetings sponsored by Houston Police Department in 2015, this study attempts to examine the causal relationship between citizen participation in COP programs and their ratings of the police. Public ratings of the police in Asia countries tends to be lower than those of the United States. The results of this study will offer policy relevant information to improve police-community relations.



The effect of community policing: Does the community policing program have a positive effect on citizen participants' ratings of the police?



Jae-Seung Lee, ABD
Sam Houston State University



Introduction

- Community policing (COP) has been a widespread strategy for the past two decades
 - Numerous police departments adopted with the support of federal government
- The implementation of community policing
 - Decentralized policing system
 - Variation in implementation between cities states
 - Stressing cooperation between police and community



Introduction (cont'd)

- Examining the effectiveness of COP
 - The relationships between;
 - its implementation and overall crime rates
 - its implementation and general public ratings of the police
 - The effect of participation in COP programs on citizen participants' ratings of the police: relatively unknown
- The purpose of this study
 - To measure the effectiveness of the current COP strategy by examining the effect of participation in a community policing outreach program on the participants' ratings of the police



Method

- Data
 - Survey of citizen participants in community policing program in Houston, Texas
 - Asking participants' attitudes toward police and their neighborhood conditions
 - Two waves of the survey
 - First wave: conducted in 2015 spring (N=452)
 - Second wave: conducted in 2015 winter (N=526)
 - 21 Positive Interaction Program (PIP) meetings covering whole Houston area
 - Including the regional civic and Hispanic group
 - Providing the Spanish version survey for Spanish only speakers
- Response rate: 74 %



Literature Review

- Factors affecting public ratings of the police
 - Demographic characteristics
 - Gender - inconsistent results
 - Age - positive association with ratings of the police
 - Race/Ethnicity - minority rated the police lower
 - Educational attainment - inconsistent results
 - Neighborhood contexts
 - Perception of disorders in neighborhood – negative association
 - Victimization experience – negative association
 - Fear of Crime – producing lower ratings of the police
 - Collective efficacy – a negative association with neighborhood disorders



Method (cont'd)

- Sample Size
 - Merging two data sets
 - Law data : Total 978
 - Exclusion of 182 cases (18.6%, double selection)
 - 26 missing cases in categorical variables (gender and race)
 - No mean difference between non-missing and missing cases (t-test: $p > .05$)
 - 26 missing values excluded from the analysis
 - Total 770 cases included in the analysis
- Statistic
 - Factor analysis
 - Ordinary Least Square (OLS) regression



Literature Review (cont'd)

- Factors affecting public ratings of the police
 - Interactions with the police
 - Satisfaction with the police service
 - Police performance as a significant predictor of public ratings of the police
 - Positive association with attitude toward the police
 - Voluntary contact with the police
 - Positive interactions associated with higher levels of trust
 - Involuntary contact with the police
 - Negative contacts with police as a primary source of lower ratings of the police



The Current Study

- Research Hypothesis
 - Participants' attendance frequency would be a significant predictor of ratings of the police.
 - Participants' attendance frequency would be positively associated with participants' attitudes toward the police.
 - Participants' attendance frequency would be positively associated with their perceptions of the COP program effectiveness.



Analysis I

- Variables
 - Dependent variable
 - Attitudes toward the police
 - a Likert scale ranging from 1 (Strongly disagree) to 5 (Strongly agree)
 - Independent variable
 - Attendance Frequency
 - a scale ranging from 1 (first time) to 10 (more than 10 times)
 - Satisfaction with the police service
 - a Likert scale ranging from 1 (Strongly disagree) to 5 (Strongly agree)
 - Fear of crime
 - a Likert scale ranging from 1 (very worried) to 3 (not worried at all)
 - Neighborhood disorders
 - a Likert scale ranging from 1 (no problem) to 4 (a serious problem)

Results for Factor Loadings

Factor	Indicator	Loadings	Eigenvalues
Attitude toward the police	Good Communicate	.820	5.075
	Well trained	.824	
	Fairness	.888	
	Hard Working	.831	
	Respectful	.881	
	Honest	.847	
Perceptions of the COP program effectiveness	Courteous	.800	4.259
	Learn about HPD works	.924	
	Familiar with HPD	.929	
	Develop a positive attitudes toward HPD	.932	
	Communicate with HPD to find solution	.928	
	Learn how to protect	.901	
Satisfaction with the police	Crime Prevention	.829	3.426
	Response time	.812	
	Burglary	.881	
	Vandalism	.862	
	Traffic law	.748	
Fear of Crime	Home Invasion	.860	2.878
	Burglarize	.850	
	Vandalism	.840	
	Violent crime	.843	
	Vandalism	.758	
Disorders in Neighborhood	Drug use	.844	3.721
	Youth Gangs	.846	
	Prostitutes	.757	
	Public Drinking	.792	
	DWI	.719	
	Faith in neighbors assistance	.611	
Collective efficacy	Trust a neighbor to return the favor	.738	2.024
	Call the police if there is a suspicious person	.730	
	Notify the police about illegal activity	.738	



Analysis I (cont'd)

- Variables
 - Independent variable
 - Collective efficacy
 - a Likert scale ranging from 1 to 5
 - Victimization experience (0 - no, 1 - yes)
 - Control: gender, African American, Hispanic, and others (reference: White), age, education

Descriptive Statistics

Variables	Measure	Mean	S.D.	Frequency (%)
Dependent				
Attitudes toward the police	Ordinal (1-5)	3.97	.80	
Perception of program effectiveness	Ordinal (1-5)	4.35	.86	
Independent				
Attendance Frequency	Ordinal (1-10)	5.65	3.90	
Satisfaction with the police service	Ordinal (1-5)	3.62	.83	
Collective Efficacy	Ordinal (1-5)	3.39	.84	
Fear of Crime	Ordinal (1-3)	2.00	.59	
Disorders in Neighborhood	Ordinal (1-5)	2.17	.78	
Victimization Experience	Yes			163 (21.2)
	No			607 (78.8)
Race/Ethnicity	White			328 (42.6)
	Hispanic			228 (29.6)
	Black			204 (26.5)
	Others			21 (2.7)
	Gender	Male		
	Female			508 (66.0)
Age	Ordinal (1-5)	3.87	1.46	
Education	Ordinal (1-5)	3.71	1.36	
Voluntary Contact	Yes			292 (37.9)
	No			478 (62.1)
Involuntary Contact	Yes			643 (83.5)
	No			127 (16.5)



Analysis II

- Variables
 - Dependent variable
 - Perceptions of the COP program effectiveness
 - a Likert scale ranging from 1 (Strongly disagree) to 5 (Strongly agree)
 - Independent variable
 - Attendance Frequency
 - a scale ranging from 1 (first time) to 10 (more than 10 times)
 - Control: gender, African American, Hispanic, and others (reference: White), age, education

Result

Variables	Analysis I (R ² =.421)		Analysis II (R ² =.128)	
	B	S. E.	B	S. E.
Attendance Frequency	-.001	.008	.025	.010*
Satisfaction with the police service	.495	.028***	.163	.037***
Collective Efficacy	.130	.030***	.138	.040**
Fear of Crime	.034	.041	-.166	.056**
Disorders in Neighborhood	.007	.031	.030	.042
Victimization Experience	.016	.059	-.024	.073
Black	-.313	.056***	.003	.074
Non-White Hispanic	-.213	.064**	-.101	.087
Others	.015	.139	-.216	.184
Male	-.006	.048	.069	.062
Age	.027	.021	.000	.028
Education	-.030	.019	-.014	.026
Voluntary Contact	.067	.052	.209	.069**
Involuntary Contact	-.044	.064	.037	.084
Constant	1.903	.186***	2.874	.247***

*P<.05, **P<.01, ***P<.001



Discussion

- No effect of attendance frequency on participants' attitudes toward the police, but on participants' perceptions of COP program effectiveness
- Inconsistent with previous findings, no effect of fear of crime, neighborhood disorder, and victimization experience on the attitudes in the participant group
- A significant effect of satisfaction with the police service and collective efficacy on both attitudes toward the police and perceptions of the COP program effectiveness



Conclusion

- Policy Implication
 - The need of employing various methods of advertisement of the COP program
 - Advertising through civic association: greater possibility to invite citizens with diffuse support
 - local newspapers, radio, TV, and the internet
 - The need of establishment of a new innovative COP program
 - Need to invite citizens with low levels of diffuse support
 - The need of diversifying the current program meeting places
 - Police stations may hinder citizens to come to the meeting.
 - Low participation of younger citizens due to time availability
 - Meetings at community facilities
 - Cyber meetings



Discussion (cont'd)

- Effective program to improve the relationship between citizens and the police, but targeting wrong population to the COP program
 - Participants have more favorable attitudes toward the police than general citizens (Lee & Zhao, 2016)
 - There may be the prevalence of diffuse support among participants; may hinder the police to gather appropriate information.
 - The need of communication with the population with low diffuse support
 - The core elements of COP: community-police partnership and problem solving
 - Hard to satisfy the two core elements with current participants
 - Focus on improving specific support of the public



Conclusion

- Limitations
 - Generalizability of the results
 - Data collected from one cite, Houston, Texas
 - The results should be verified in other research cites.
 - A longitudinal data set to examine the effect of COP program
 - Identify the first-time attendants and track them to capture the effect better



Discussion (cont'd)

- Theory of public support of government agencies (Easton, 1965)
 - Diffuse support
 - Based on loyalty to political system
 - Gaining from the diffused positive image of government among their neighbors or family rather than factual knowledge
 - Specific support
 - Based on citizens' satisfaction with specific policies and services
 - Gaining from their positive interaction or experience with government agencies or officials



Session 2



The Dynamics of the International Police Cooperation Among China and its Neighbor Countries

Yuewei Ge

Zhejiang Police College

Abstract

As China rises as the second largest economy in the world, people, goods and information are exchanged across the border in the large volume and fast speed than ever among China and its neighbor countries. In order to safeguard the reform and opening-up fruit and create a benign neighboring environment, China has more desire and capability to counter the cross-border crime through the international police cooperation. There are five theories to explain why police in different countries or regions are willing to cooperate: functionalism, bureaucracy, systematic dynamism, game theory and geo-economic and cultural similarity. None of them can be used to fully explain China's case. The inter-connected interests, common threats and the police professionalism are the key driving forces of the international police cooperation especially for China and its neighbor countries. However, these forces would be weakened in three scenarios: first is the diversification between the nation and the local border areas; second are the different perceptions to the threats from different countries; third is the discrepancy of police culture among them. Therefore, sufficiency and equality should be considered to push forward the police cooperation among China and its neighbor countries.

Key words: China; neighbor countries; international police cooperation; dynamism

China has built international police cooperation with almost all neighboring countries, which helps to crack down the cross-border crimes, maintain the social order, and safeguard the state security. In recent years China squabbles with a few of neighbor countries for the disputes in the sea. There is also some disappointment with Russia - the largest land neighbor (Liu, 2016). Many research before observed obstacles and setbacks in policing cooperation. So why are most of neighbor countries still willing to cooperate with China? This article will examine five theories of police cooperation in the first section. Then put forward a tri-element framework to analyze the dynamics of police cooperation among China and neighbor countries. The barriers are analyzed in the third section through literature review. Finally, the result of the positive and negative forces is explored and a conclusion is made.

Five Theories of Police Cooperation

Functionalism

Functionalism is instrumental to explain the cooperation in EU justice and internal affairs. European integration pushes the EU member states to transfer certain sovereign, which leads to a high level of cooperation in policing. Especially after

signing of the Schengen Agreement, the EU member states abolished the common border checks and free movement of persons inevitably would lead to the deterioration of the public security situation. The flow of crime pushes forward the police cooperation among EU members (Fang, 2000). Functionalism in interpreting EU integration including police cooperation is quite successful, but it is insufficient to explain the process of ASEAN integration which obviously follows EU as an example. It is also doubtful to use functionalism theory to fully explain the dynamic mechanism of international police cooperation among China and its neighbor countries.

Bureaucratization Theory of Policing

This theory is based on Max Webber's Bureaucracy theory. Criminal investigation needs complicated techniques and high efficiency. As a result, the police become professionals and more and more independent. The police force is a hierarchical organization including INTERPOL and EUROPOL. Thus the international police cooperation changes from politics-driven to technical rational-driven which deepens the cooperation and makes it more sustainable (Deflem, 2008). However, is the police force in developing countries a typical bureaucracy just like the West? Similarly, in the case of military force, many developing countries has

learned superficially in police management from the West such as ranks, uniforms and rites. The internal core of the traditional culture and values is not so easily transformed. The techniques and professional skills for policing lag behind the West as well.

System Dynamics

System dynamics considers the social order in a geographical area from the lens of system, which consists of four sub-systems - people, information, structure and relations. Theoretically synergetic supply and self-organized dynamic could be identified from the analysis of cause-and-effect flow and positive-negative mechanism (Qian, 2015). Sovereignty should be considered as a key variable in analyzing the cross border cooperation which possibly complicates the cause-and-effect and positive-negative analysis. Considering too many variables are the weakness of the system dynamics theory which is tended to lose focus.

Dual Game Theory

There are dual games in international cooperation among countries. One is in the level of countries, the other is in the level of law enforcement inside the country. Researchers observed these phenomena both in China-Russia and in Europe-Russia police cooperation (Zhang, 2013; Block, 2007). The nation-level game target is national interests, while the domestic game is concerning the turf war. Generally, the outside game would overshadow the inside game. The anti-terrorism cooperation framework in Shanghai Cooperation Organization is the result of multi-lateral game. However, the game theory model is too idealistic which has some distance with the reality. In the case of China, the players may include those in three levels: nation, ministry and local.

Geo-economic and cultural similarity

Neighboring countries or regions have the common history and culture. They are in the similar social and economic development stage. They also have the same or similar police organization, management and institution. These sharing memories and experience would naturally create intimacy and complementary interests which is helpful to cooperate in policing. The north Europe (Larsson, 2006) and the Yangtze River Delta region (Cai, 2012) are the examples. Nowadays China has land boundaries with fourteen neighbor countries. Obviously shared borders are not the only element to decide whether China has a close and cooperative relationship with them. Confucianism may have great influence to the east and south east Asia in the

history. Today there is diversification of culture in China's neighbor countries. China does have some economic influence, but it is not guaranteed to be transformed to political clout including the field of judiciary and policing.

Tri-element Analysis

This article puts forward a tri-element pattern to explain why the neighbor countries are willing to cooperate with China in policing. Interest, threat and police professionalism are the most critical driving forces to push forward the cooperation.

National Interest

First, national interest is the foremost element in the international relations. Since the opening-up policy is launched, China's national interest is economic development. Therefore, each administration puts the reform in priority while embraces the globalization. The foreign policy serves for the domestic reform and development - that is to sustain a benign and stable international system, grab the opportunity of the new scientific and technology revolution. Thus China integrates itself into the global system and rises up as the second global economy. Now the protection of overseas interest is a big challenge for China with the "go-out" strategy. President Xi initiated the One Belt and One Road construction which would share the dividend of China's development with the neighboring areas and even the far most part of the world. The principle of amity, sincerity, mutual benefit and inclusiveness is raised especially for promoting the international cooperation with the neighbor countries. China proposes to build a community of shared interests and common destiny with its neighbors. For China, cooperation is one of the means of protecting national interest because it could be realized to combine the material interest with the ideal righteousness based on traditional Chinese thoughts. Policing cooperation is the part of the international cooperation (Zhao, 2014).

There are six geo-strategic blocks surrounding China - Russia and Central Asia, Afghanistan-Pakistan, Indian sub continent, Land ASEAN, Marine ASEAN and North-South Korea and Japan. Russia is the largest neighbor of China. The United States and its allies in Europe oppressed Russia's strategic space though Russia tried to transform itself to a westernized nation after the dissolution of the Soviet Union, which forces Russia to walk close with China. As a result, both countries share the common grand strategic interest - defense from the oppression of the United States and its allies, maintaining the

status and esteem as a great power and independent voice in the world affairs. Russia made a much closer strategic cooperation with China facing the sanction of the West after Ukraine crisis. As to China the United States and its allies has been engaged and tried to transform it. Currently the rebalance strategy of the United States puts great strategic pressure on China in the west Pacific. Tensions in the East and South China sea are simmering. Therefore, it is also China's national interest to keep the equability in the northwest land avoiding to fight between two fronts. Against this backdrop China and Russia have a strong motivation to push forward comprehensive cooperation including policing.

The Land ASEAN are Vietnam, Laos, Cambodia, Thailand and Myanmar who share common land boundaries with China and have close history and cultural links. Many China's ethnic minorities live across the border. China has traditional historical and now economic influence. The Land ASEAN countries have to respect China's interest although they want to keep the balance with the other outside powers such as the United States, India and Europe. The Marine ASEAN are Philippines, Indonesia, Malaysia, Brunei, and Singapore who are more influenced by the United States and are more intended to acquire economic interests from China while depend on the United States for security guarantee. China is willing to share the development interest with ASEAN especially to build a common destiny, supporting ASEAN and the regional economic integration.

The geo-political and economic situation is complicated in Afghanistan, Pakistan and the Indian sub-continent in which the national interests are intertwined among these countries. From the perspective of realistic international relations theory, China becomes the all-weather friend of Pakistan due to the triangle relations of China, Pakistan and India. Pakistan is the forefront of the anti-terrorism in the strategy of the United States. Considering Russia's influence there are altogether five players in this region. China has wide range international police cooperation with Pakistan. The project of China-Pakistan economic corridor would be of significance for one belt and one road initiative (OBOR). China will deepen the cooperation with Pakistani law enforcement with the launch of OBOR to assure the safety of the project. China and India have common interests as the two largest developing countries in the world affairs while there are many differences. China tries to keep a good and close relation with neighbors and seek common ground while reserving differences. Therefore, China actively rolls out the police cooperation with India. The Ministry of Public Security of China and the Ministry of Interior of

India released the joint statement to promise to strengthen the law enforcement cooperation in December, 2015.

The geo-political structure of the two Korea and Japan is the last residual of the Cold War where there are both traditional security and non-traditional security. The structure of different national interests of different countries constrains the policing cooperation though China actively pushed forward the policing cooperation in capitals in 2008 when Beijing held the Olympic games.

Common Threats

Second, the common threats especially the terrorism and drug which China and its neighbor countries face are the vital driving forces to propel the policing cooperation. Terrorism, extremism and separatism are regarded as the evil for China. Terrorism is the direct threat for Russia, middle Asia countries and Afghanistan-Pakistan as well. China has launched comprehensive cooperation in the framework of Shanghai Cooperation Organization (SCO). Anti-terrorism Treaty was signed. The regional anti-terrorism organization was set up. The cooperation mechanism includes central, ministry and local level. SCO members have conducted joint anti-terrorism exercises regularly.

The northwest and southwest of China are threatened by drug crimes originated from the Gold Crescent and Gold Triangle. Drug crimes in these regions are connected with poverty and terrorism which undermine the stability and security of China's border area. Anti-drug policing is one of the earliest cooperation among China and the other countries. China has devoted itself to the cooperation in the UN framework as well as in the sub-region framework. Anti-drug policing is also the lasting driving force in the overall police cooperation between China and the United States, the Third Neighbor.

Professionalism of Police

Third, professionalism of police is the invisible engine to drive the cooperation of different countries including China. The modern police is originated from the United Kingdom. The professionalism and independence are the unique quality of police force. The feature of police culture is legalism, professionalism and scientism. The police are the professional force to crack down the crime, manage the social order and safeguard the public security and should have high standard of career. As the fighting crime force, the police is the symbol of justice and law. The police is also the monopoly

of the state violence and becomes a paramilitary force in which the system of ranks, the uniform and the discipline are all like the military. With the development of forensic science and technology the police profession has the clothes of science. The professionalism and independence are the underlying driving forces of international police cooperation in the western history. China and the neighboring countries are welcoming the new policing revolution and launching the new reform of policing. The specific profession and the forensic science are the sharing discourse fields in the daily job of the police cooperation.

Dynamics of Cooperation

It is necessary to examine the detail of these three elements to better understand the dynamics of cooperation.

First, the national interests can be categorized as the long-term/short-term, political/economic and nation/local level. In terms of long-term interests, China, Russia and the central Asia countries have the common consensus. Overall China also has the common economic interests with the neighbor countries which is the foundation of cooperation in OBOR. However, the interest in nation level does not necessarily coincide with the local. Taking Russia as an example, some transportation infrastructure projects along the border region had not been launched because of the resistance of far east local government (Liu, 2016). Another example is the divergence of interests between the ethnic military controlled areas and the central government of Myanmar. At the same time the situation of the social order and crime control along the borders is directly related to the local interests. Cooperation should be extended from the central government to the local governments especially those in the border areas. China has set up three-level police cooperation - the central government, the ministry and the local government along the border with most of the land neighbor countries. Currently the institution building and the exchange of personnel are moving smoothly.

Second, the threat can fall in two categories - the direct and the indirect threats. Now every country claims that the terrorism and the other cross border crime are the common enemy in the world. Nonetheless the definition and perception of threats are different. China and Russia are all suffering the pain caused by the terrorism and have close cooperation against the terrorism. But for the local governments in the border areas of these countries, the direct threats maybe the other criminal offenses.

Meantime the Chinese telecommunication fraud criminals hide in the neighbor counties along the border to escape the crackdown from the Chinese police. There are some other crime gangs in the overseas Chinese circle as well. China has to extend the policing activities across the border through the international police cooperation in order to fight the cross border crimes. The host countries would not necessarily sense the threats. So the cooperation between China and these countries is an asymmetric structure in which China is more active. The latter would be more proactive if the overseas Chinese crime did not disturb the local social order.

Third, the police professional culture in Asian countries has "oriental" features. There are many modern institutions learned from the West. However, the discrepancy between the East and West political culture does still exist, which could be simplified into the diversification of the rule of morality and the rule of law. Europe has formed a contract culture while particularly in the east Asia the connections and relations among people play an important role in the daily life. Even in Russia which was regarded by Karl Marx as the Asian country, the spirit of contract and rule of law is not so strong as that in the West. ASEAN invented the Asian way to create the consensus to achieve the integration and cooperation. However, they are viewed more as talk shop than a practical way. China and most of its neighbor countries are still in the way of building a modern nation state with the modern governing capability. In the history of the international police cooperation which occurred in the western developed countries, the professionalism, scientism and rule of law help the police become independent and cooperate with each other. The global north in which the law enforcement has close cooperation is such a group of countries that has almost the same cultural tradition and people with the similar society structure and economic development. By comparing, China and its neighbor countries have different cultural tradition and are in different development stage. Police officers who try to make cooperation may face many uncertainties.

It is helpful to review the other side of the coin when examining the dynamics of law enforcement cooperation. That is the impediment in the contrary direction. Scholars have studied this issue in wide range which is listed in the Table 1.

Table 1: The Impediments against Cooperation

Scope	Hindering elements	Category
anti-drugs (Yang, 2014)	weak international institutions concerning anti-drugs	international institution
	fierce external situation	international situation
	barriers in sharing of intelligence	cooperation institution
	inefficient training system	training system
	ineffective substitute plantation	miscellaneous
anti-terrorism (Li, 2009)	lack of consensus on the definition of terrorism	consensus
	lack of law*	capacity building
	over relying on INTERPOL	capacity building
	lack of experience and capacity of conquering the difficulties	capacity building
China-Russia cooperation (Jin, 2010)	lack of operation procedures and rules, discrepancy of legal system	capacity building
	cross border investigation lagging behind	capacity building
	difficulty in evidence collection overseas	cooperation institution
	ineffective crackdown, corruption	capacity building
	scarcity of experts and low quality of law enforcement	capacity building
	lack of central hub of communication, fragmentation of cooperation institution and delaying response	cooperation institution
China-Kyrgyzstan cooperation (Zhang, 2006)	uncertainty in domestic and international situation	international situation
	lack of consensus on the definition of terrorism and reaction	consensus
	different features of crime	miscellaneous
	signed many agreements while lack of implementation	capacity building
China-ASEAN cooperation in Mekong river region (Chen, 2014)	complicated situation in the region with different partners	miscellaneous
	interference of the outside powers and competition of the other institutions	international situation
	involved with NGO and the media	miscellaneous
China-ASEAN maritime cooperation (Jiang, 2013)	joined in different international institutions	international institution
	Maritime disputes	miscellaneous
	lack of teeth of the international treaties	international institution
China-ASEAN training cooperation (Tang, 2012)	out of the radar of the policy makers	consciousness
	different economic development stage	miscellaneous
	instability and fragile security of the local region	international situation
	discrepancy of culture	miscellaneous
	discrepancy of training system	training system
	competition from Japan, South Korea and the western countries	international situation

* China enacted anti-terrorism law in 2015.

The cooperation of law enforcement between China and the neighbor countries covers anti-drugs, anti-terrorism, maritime patrol, joint patrol in the Mekong river and training. The thirty-one impediments can be classified to five categories: international situation, international institution/cooperation institution, training system/capacity building, consensus/consciousness and others. Impediments rooted in the international situation could pull back the cooperation in the strategic horizon, while the nation interest and threats from the international arena are the driving forces. The net result is that the consideration of the national interest and the common threats surmounts the obstacles.

The institution and training system are related to the capacity building of police force. China is now launching a new turn of policing reform with the target of standardization of policing, improving the professional quality of law enforcement and digitization of the routine information. The institution and capacity building in the international cooperation are the necessary components of the reform. The internal and external affairs involved policing should be considered and operated in coordination.

Conclusion

According to the investigation of the international cooperation among China and its neighbor countries, this article puts forward a tri-element dynamic to explain why the police cooperation could be sustainable. Figure 1 sketches the mechanics.

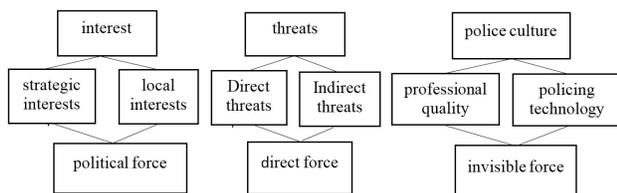


Figure 1: Tri-element mechanics

If China obtained the consensus concerning the strategic interests with neighbor countries, the international police cooperation would be assured by the political willing to cooperate. However, this cooperation would not be necessarily implemented in the border areas if the local interests are not completely coinciding with that of the central government. Therefore, the local authorities along the border in China should strike the balance and

bridge the gap to push forward the cooperation from bottom.

The common threats faced by China and its neighbors provide the direct driving force for the police cooperation which involves the anti-drug, fighting against terrorism and addressing the other non-traditional security issues. But the perceptions and concerns from the big power and the small power are not the same. Policy makers should make comprehensive analysis in different strategic directions. If ignoring the unique desire and appeal of other countries, the cooperation would be imbalance and asymmetric.

The individual police officer is responsible to cooperate with the counterpart of the other countries. The professional quality of law enforcement should be improved continuously, while the reform of the policing system must be advanced and the forensic science and technology should follow the steps of the developed countries. Meanwhile China would burden the responsibility as a great power to aid the neighbor small countries in the field of policing and provide the public security goods through broadening and deepening international police cooperation.

References

Block, Ludo. (2007) Cooperation between the European Union member states and the Russian Federation. *Policing & Society*, 17, 376-379.

Cai, Tian. (2012). The dynamics of the policing integration in the delta region of Yangtze River. *Public Security Studies*, 207(1), 46-48.

Chen, Hongmei. (2014). Challenges with the law enforcement cooperation among China, Laos, Myanmar and Thai in the Mekong river. *Southeast Asia Studies*, 4, 28-33.

Fang, Changping. (2000). Cooperation in judiciary and interiors in EU: Dynamics, Institution and problems. *Europe*, 6, 53-54.

Jiang, Wei. (2013). How to enhance the cooperation institution of fighting the maritime crimes between China and ASEAN. *Law and Society*, 12, 93-94.

Jin, Huixin. (2010). Sino-Russia cooperation of fighting the cross-border crimes along the boundary and the judiciary cooperation. *Serbia Studies*, 37(3), 60-66.

Larsson, Paul. (2006). International police cooperation: A Norwegian perspective. *Journal of Financial Crime*, (13)4, 460-461.

-
- Li, Shuhua. (2009). Barriers in China's international cooperation of anti-terrorism. *Journal of the University of Public Security* (social science edition), 139(3), 134-138.
- Liu, Changmin. (2016). Problems in the Sino-Russian cooperation in the border areas. *Pacific Journal*, 24(3), 63.
- Mathew, Deflem, Hu Rebing translated into Chinese. (2008). The international cooperation of anti-terrorism: Comparing INTERPOL and EUROPOL(A). *Journal of Public Security Studies*, 6, 44.
- Qian Jie. (2015). The dynamics of the regional social coordinated system. *Journal of Public Security Studies*, 5, 37-41.
- Tan, Bo & Ying, Yan. (2012). How to improve the police training cooperation between China and ASEAN. *Journal of Guanxi Police Academy*, 25(6), 25-28.
- Yang, Yanchan. (2014). Barriers in China's international cooperation of anti-narcotic. *Journal of Yunnan Police Academy*, 3, 19-22.
- Zhang, Jie. (2013). The multilateral cooperation of anti-terrorism in the framework of Shanghai Cooperation Organization from the perspective of game theory. *Jingyue Journal*, 1, 5-9.
- Zhang, Jie. (2006). Barriers in Sino-Kyrgyzstan police cooperation. *Journal of Wuhan Police Academy*, 74(4), 83-85.
- Zhao, Yu. (Oct. 28, 2014). The international cooperation of policing is the effective way of cracking down the cross-border crimes. *Law Weekend*, Retrieved Mar. 26, 2016, from <http://www.legalweekly.cn/index.php/Index/article/id/6247>.

A Legitimate Question: A Comparative Look at Police Legitimacy in Asia and in the United States

Kwan-Lamar Blount-Hill, JD

City University of New York Graduate Center

Yunho Yeom, JD

John Jay College of Criminal Justice in New York City, New York.

Legitimacy has been defined in myriad ways, succinctly as an “entitlement to obedience” (Tyler, 2004), and most commonly seen as based alternately on notions of legality (compliance with “the rule of law”), conventionality (conformity with the public will), or efficacy (success in reducing and suppressing criminal activity) (Schulhofer et al., 2011). One might ask, however, what “entitles” one to “obedience”? Said somewhat differently, legitimacy may be conceived as an entitlement to exercise power granted by some collectively-accepted origin of authority. Still, even this definition leaves questions. What is meant by “power,” for instance? How is something “collectively-accepted”? Other definitions present questions of their own.

In resolving nuanced contentions involving theoretical conceptualizations, comparative studies assist in that they “teach something about one context through the examination of another” (Blount-Hill, in press). In other words, “Cross-national study of policing views can not only lead to knowledge about policing views in other nations but can also result in better, clearer, more critical understanding of views of the police in one’s own nation” (Lambert et al., 2014). In the context of recent high-level misgivings about the American public’s current acceptance of police legitimacy (see Lowery, 2015), understanding what the factors and processes which enhance or diminish legitimacy are critical for rehabilitating the current state of affairs in civilian public-uniformed police relations in the United States and will do much to inform police practice in other areas of the world. To contribute to this endeavor, we propose a cross-cultural study of public views on police legitimacy in two countries – the United States and South Korea – adding to the comparative literature available, providing American’s insight from policing as experienced in an Asian context, and vice versa, while fine-tuning conceptual understandings of legitimacy in theory.

Legitimacy and the Bottoms-Tankebe Model

While universal acceptance of any one definition of legitimacy has remained elusive, it is widely agreed that law enforcement legitimacy is an essential feature of democratic policing. Where officers are seen as legitimate authority figures, worthy of obedience and deference, the public is much more willing to comply with their orders and directives, as well as written legal mandates (Tyler, 2004). Beyond mere compliance, members of the public evince a greater willingness to cooperate with law enforcement, proactively assisting in the achievement of police objectives and the institution’s overall crime control mission (Wolfe, 2011). Cooperation may be seen along a continuum. At one end, the general public might simply support the police, voicing satisfaction in their service and the desire for police work to continue, persuading others in their social networks of the legitimacy of the police, and encouraging political leaders to provide adequate funding and resources to law enforcement agencies. At the other, individuals can actively cooperate with the police, through proactively assisting in policing, reporting crimes and divulging information helpful to criminal investigation, participating in formal organizations (e.g., neighborhood watch, citizen academies), and engaging in informal social control over crime activity through reliance on social sanctioning and collective efficacy. From compliance to support to cooperation, retaining legitimacy ensures that police officials are capable of effectively carrying out their order maintenance and enforcement duties with little resistance from the majority of the public.

Due to the importance of legitimacy to the policing function, it is essential that police discern how legitimacy is sustained and enhanced. Where this interest is neglected, “legitimacy deficits” can develop (Bottoms & Tankebe, 2012), where the citizens’ obligation to obey as derived from the public’s strong sense of law enforcement’s legitimacy weakens and proves ineffective in compelling

individuals to defer. In some cases, generalized apathy towards legal authorities can devolve into cynicism towards the law. Cynically believing that enforcement agents are either inefficacious or worse can lead to legitimacy crises – instances where claims to legitimacy by law enforcement are wholesale ignored, disbelieved, or actively disputed (Blount-Hill & Peirce, in progress). One recent attempt at a comprehensive understanding of legitimacy is that by Bottoms and Tankebe.

Bottoms and Tankebe make two distinct contributions to the conceptualization of legitimacy in criminal justice. First, they propose that legitimacy is dialogic in nature. That is, legitimacy is not a static characteristic assigned to an authority figure, but rather dynamic and conversant in quality, created through a constant flow of action and reaction, move and response, interactive communication between the authority figure, or power-holder, and those over whom power is exercised. The second important contribution is a multidimensional model of legitimacy encompassing an assessment of (1) legality, or police lawfulness, (2) fairness, both procedural and distributive, and (3) effectiveness in the central mission of crime control and order maintenance (Bottoms & Tankebe, 2012; Tankebe et al., 2016). More so than previous legitimacy models, this was developed with an eye towards a globally generalizable definition of the term, one that would translate seamlessly across geographic, cultural and national bounds. If indeed the theorists succeeded in this task, the Bottoms-Tankebe model represents a significant leap forward in conceptualizing, operationalizing, studying and understanding legitimacy.

Proposed Study

Because the model put forward by Bottoms and Tankebe was specifically designed for generalizability, it is an ideal first choice for investing time and resources toward studying the universality of any legitimacy model comparatively, internationally and across cultures. Furthermore, due to its comprehensiveness, even where some aspects of the model are found unsupported by replicative evidence, if even some components demonstrate cross-cultural strength, researchers will have reason to look to those as a basis for a universal model of legitimacy. For example, were only the fairness component of the model to be supported, this would validate a field-wide reversion to a focus on procedural justice (Tyler, 2004), distributive or interactional justice (see Folger, 1996), or a combination thereof as comprising globally-relevant legitimacy concerns. The same can be said for each of the other Bottoms-Tankebe components.

Even where the model is not shown to be exact in its influence across cultures, context-specific differences discovered in a comparative study would provide meaningful insights. Specifically, the proposed study will concentrate on populations in the United States and South Korea. While much research has been done in the United States, relatively few studies have focused on public perceptions of police in South Korea. This study will add to that literature. Moreover, if results from prior studies in the U. S. are replicated, those results are strengthened; on the other hand, differential outcomes may provide cause for closer inspection. Finally, the discovery that Bottoms and Tankebe's model is not uniform in predictable outcomes will, in and of itself, be a relevant contribution to criminal justice research.

Considering the need for comparative research in criminal justice generally, and police legitimacy specifically, this study is designed to test the robustness of the Bottoms-Tankebe model in the United States and South Korea. This study utilizes samples from two subsets of the population – college samples and samples from the public – in the two countries. For each, researchers use stratified sampling to ensure appropriate representation of the subject population's demographics, such as age, gender, and race/ethnicity. Seeking a sample of 1,100 individuals selected from online and university campuses, respondents will be asked to provide their responses to questionnaire items taken from Tankebe et al. (2016). In the U.S., an online sample of 200 respondents will be conducted using Survey Monkey, and a sample of 500 college students drawn from five institutions – City University of New York's John Jay College of Criminal Justice and Graduate Center, William Paterson University, the University of South Carolina, and Tuskegee University – of which 100 students each will be surveyed. In South Korea, an online sample of 200 Korean civilians will be obtained using Tillion Panel, an equivalent to Survey Monkey in South Korea. For the Korean college sample, this sample will be comprised of 200 college students at Pusan National University, South Korea.

Review of Asia-Based Literature

The need for further study of police legitimacy in Asia has been echoed many times, and the usefulness of comparative research between nations has been similarly emphasized. Currently, literature in this area is scarce, though the a few roughly related studies provide some illumination on the topic.

South Korea

South Korea had been colonized by Japan since 1910 until its surrender to the United States in 1945 (CIA World Factbook, 2016). Subsequently, two different countries were set up in the Korean Peninsula, a democratic-based government (the Republic of Korea, or "South Korea") and a communist-style government (the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, "North Korea"). South Korea has experienced a military coup and successive authoritative regimes, but emerged a stable democracy since the late 1980s, achieving, with it, rapid economic growth. During martial rule, the Korean police had served the interests of the authoritative regimes, engendering low levels of confidence from the Korean public (Jang & Hwang, 2014). Since democratization, the Korean police have reformed their systems and adopted citizen-friendly policies, such as service-oriented policing, to change this image.

In one of the few studies on public perceptions of police in South Korea, Hwang, McGarrell, and Benson (2005) noted a relationship between neighborhood characteristics and citizen attitudes toward law enforcement. After reviewing 11,500 telephone survey responses conducted by Korean National Police Agency, the authors found that residents of rural areas, older citizens, and residents with prior encounters with the police had more positive perceptions of the police. They reasoned that "rapid, growth, industrialization, and mobility may challenge traditional sources of social control and collective efficacy, thereby leading to higher levels of fear and victimization in urban settings" (p. 596). Although they did not explicitly use the Bottoms-Tankebe model, questions in the survey were closely related to some elements in the legitimacy model. However, authors focused only on the relationship between perceptions towards police and community characteristics, not on how this relationship can be linked to another aspect of the model, such as compliance with the law.

Jang and Hwang (2014) found that worries about crime are negatively related to confidence in the Korean police. The authors reviewed 10,853 respondents to the 2008 Korean National Crime Victimization Survey. They observed that police effectiveness was an important instrumental concern, noting that "confidence in police is linked to how well the police are doing their jobs," such as reducing crimes (p. 307). However, the authors did not consider other three elements of the Bottoms-Tankebe legitimacy model, such as lawfulness or distributive and procedural fairness. Also, the authors focused only on the relationship between

confidence in police and police effectiveness, but failed to identify how such confidence lead to public interaction with the criminal justice system, such as cooperation with the police.

Japan

Japan became a regional power in Asia during early 20th century, occupying several east-Asian countries (CIA World Factbook, 2016). After a brief decline in stature following its defeat in World War II, Japan had gradually recovered its political and economic power; however, it has experienced an economic slowdown starting in the 1990s. Still, Japanese police have been able to institute a model of community-based policing widely considered successful, utilizing the "koban," a small, accessible neighborhood police office (Tsushima & Hamai, 2015). Police in Japan have also suffered from a poor public image due to perceived excessiveness in its crime control strategies and alleged infringements on individual privacy (Cao & Stack, 2004).

Cao and Stack (2004) found that confidence in the police in the United States was significantly higher than in Japan. After reviewing data in the World Values Surveys from 1981 and 1991, authors found that differences in nation, age, marriage, religiosity, fighting with police, and size of town all significantly affect confidence in the police. They concluded that although Japan has a lower crime rate and its police have fewer publicized serious scandals, the Japanese do not have as much confidence in their police as the American public. Even though this study did not utilize the Bottoms-Tankebe model, it defined confidence in the police as necessity for the police to carry out their task effectively. This definition seems to reflect both the police effectiveness and lawfulness elements of the model.

Tsushima and Hamai (2015) considered a legitimacy model to investigate the causal relationship between trust in the Japanese police and cooperation with them. They reviewed the 2011 National Crime Victimization Survey and randomly selected 1,251 respondents from 136 Japanese cities and towns. They found that legitimacy did not appear to be very applicable to the Japanese data. They provided three reasons for the result: 1) civic individualism, which is closely related to the word duty in the questionnaire, was not engrained in Japanese history or culture, 2) the Japanese do not have enough contact to understand their police, and 3) legitimacy might be less applicable in a relatively safe society, like Japan, because people are less likely to recognize the necessity of formal crime control. This study is one of a few studies that explicitly drew on a legitimacy model (but not the Bottoms-Tankebe

model); however, it reveals that such models might not work for all nations identically.

China

The People's Republic of China had been a dominant civilization in the world until civil unrest, major famines, military defeats, and foreign occupation during early 20th century (CIA World Factbook, 2016). After World War II, Mao Zedong established an autocratic socialist system that "imposed strict controls over everyday life and cost the lives of tens of millions of people" (CIA World Factbook, 2016). However, after 1978, Deng Xiaoping introduced market-oriented system to boom the country's economy. Since then, China has achieved an unprecedented and rapid economic development. The Chinese police not only have a highly politicized and centralized structure, but they also enjoy enormous authority and discretion that can easily turn into the abuse of power. Thus, the police have suffered from an unequal power relationship with its citizen constituents and a problem with police corruption (Wu & Sun, 2009).

In a 2001 study, Cao and Hou found that Chinese citizens held less confidence in police than their counterparts in the United States. The authors did not explicitly examine the Bottoms-Tankebe model of police legitimacy, but they viewed public opinion toward police as important because "positive images of the police are necessary for them to function effectively" (p.88). Thus, they noted that public opinion about police is closely linked to the police legitimacy through police effectiveness, but did not explore how this legitimacy might lead to the public interaction, such as cooperation with the police.

Wu and Sun (2009) argued that the Chinese may have a more or less positive attitude toward police depending on their age and perceived political power. They examined data collected by the Chinese Academy of Social Science Research Center in 2003, which conducted 717 face-to-face interviews. The authors found that "younger Chinese tended to have lower levels of trust in police, and Chinese who viewed themselves as having greater political power and influence expressed higher levels of trust in police" (p. 181). They reasoned that not only are younger Chinese less influenced by official media, whose content is censored by the government, but they also are more willing to report their negative attitudes toward police. Moreover, the authors pointed out that citizens with higher levels of perceived political power tend to identify themselves with government agencies, which results in positive attitudes toward them, including police. This study drew on conflict theory as the guiding theoretical

framework because China is built largely on Marxism, but unfortunately it did not utilize the Bottoms-Tankebe model.

India

The Republic of India is a former British colony which gained its independence in 1947 and established its current national police force a year later (CIA World Factbook, 2016; Lambert et al., 2014). It is now seen as a dominant economic and political power in Asia and an important ally of the United States and global West. India boasts the second largest population in the world, at nearly 1.3 billion people according to 2015 estimates (CIA World Factbook, 2016). India society reflects a communalistic ethic common in Eastern nations, with the vast majority of its people practicing Hinduism as a religion. Islam represents that second largest religion practiced in the country, with Christianity and Sikhism a distant third and fourth. India has a federalist style of government, where its subnational states and territories exercise some degree of administrative autonomy from the national government. Nevertheless, its police force remains nationally-based.

The police in India are widely seen as corrupt and engender negative reactions across the societal classes (Lambert et al., 2014; Madan & Nalla, 2015). Still, few studies have been conducted examining the public's perception of police legitimacy in India. One study that comes close to doing so was conducted by Lambert and his colleagues (2015), comparing survey responses from samples of college students attending a U. S. and an Indian university. The study was designed to test the endorsement of community policing as a law enforcement strategy. Community policing, more so than any other, is supposed to reflect the incorporation of procedural and distributive fairness, police accountability to the public and co-determination of effectiveness objectives, all aspects of the Bottoms-Tankebe legitimacy model. Lambert et al. found that Indian respondents were more supportive of community policing initiatives than American ones, and that this support correlated even with more punitive justice orientations, signaling an acceptance in India that community-involved policing is an effective crime control strategy.

Madan and Nalla (2015) conducted a study more directly related to police legitimacy, accessing satisfaction with the police in India. From a convenience sample of middle-class neighborhood residents and rail car travelers, they found support from many of the correlates of satisfaction with police previously identified in American-based

studies. One important finding was that procedural justice measures appeared to be the strongest predictor of citizen satisfaction in this Indian sample. Of greatest concern was the conclusion that Indian police forces were corrupt and nonresponsive to public concerns.

Hong Kong

The Hong Kong Special Administrative Region was previously an East Asian colony of the British Empire and has been a territory of the People's Republic of China since 1997 (CIA World Factbook, 2016). Due to its long history of British rule combined with the Chinese ethnic and cultural heritage of the great majority of its people, Hong Kong has a unique combination of Western and East Asian influences in both its governance structure and cultural norms (Li & Sun, 2015). Due to China's adoption of the "one country, two systems" formula, Hong Kong has been able to retain a more democratic and capitalist political and economic system. Without the radical imposition of Chinese governmental forms on the former colony, Hong Kong's policing apparatus has only gradually changed its form from its colonial predecessor. Nevertheless, the Hong Kong Police Force (colloquially, "the Force") has made substantial moves to incorporate a community policing strategy reflective of methods adopted from the United Kingdom and other Western nations.

In 2004, Lo and Cheuk conducted a qualitative assessment of the six major community policing initiatives employed by the Force in varying phases from the 1960s until the present. Evaluating these initiatives on the basis of performance measures and institutional obstacles or constraints, the researchers found that both interaction and communication between the police and public had been improved, the Force's image had been rehabilitated to some degree, and public support and cooperation in crime control had grown, but that public involvement and levels of trust had failed to meet objectives. They identified a number of constraints that helped diminish potential returns, including a lack of institutional and rank-and-file support, an absence of formal avenues of public participation in police policymaking and implementation, lack of incentives for officer-commitment to community policing, and minimal transparency. Due to this, somewhat separate trajectories had been observed in public satisfaction and trust, and, at any rate, even after improvements in public perception, the Force was seen negatively relative to other societal institutions.

It would seem that these impressions had improved somewhat a decade later, at least among elderly residents of Hong Kong. In a study of public

satisfaction with police among the elderly, the Hong Kong police were seen in a generally positive light (Li & Sun, 2015). (This, however, is also a trend observed in other studies, where age positively correlates with satisfaction with police; thus, it could be that, among younger citizens, the Force is still seen in a less amicable light). Perhaps the more consequential finding of the study was its comparison of three distinct models on their impact on public satisfaction – instrumental, expressive and legitimacy models. The instrumental model reflected concerns roughly aligning with the Bottoms-Tankebe concept of effectiveness and the legitimacy model encompassed fairness, whereas the expressive model has no clear analogue in the comprehensive model. Expressive concerns are those revolving around the degree to which the police are seen as upholding community values, as morally-superior agents enforcing publicly-accepted societal norms, and as integrated and integral parts of the neighborhoods they serve. Thus, the addition of some items measuring expressive concerns to the current study will help assess to what degree the Bottoms-Tankebe model will need to be amended to retain a claim of comprehensiveness.

Taiwan

Taiwan (officially, the Republic of China) has moved from a totalitarian government, comprised of the last remnants of China's former nationalist party, to one more emulative of a Western democracy (CIA World Factbook, 2016). In the process, its economy has boomed and it has become one of Asia's "Tigers," those nations seen as centers of economic productivity and achievement (CIA World Factbook, 2016; Sun et al., 2013). Taiwanese democratization efforts have also filtered to the National Police Agency, which has attempted to move from a source of martial law enforcement to having a greater civil libertarian orientation (Sun et al., 2013).

Unfortunately, research on police legitimacy in Taiwan is scarce. In fact, in seeking research literature for this review, the researchers were able to find only a few studies evaluating only tangentially-related topics, such as the patterns of community policing on the island or measures of overall satisfaction with police service (an outcome influenced, in part, by legitimacy assessments, but distinct from it). Still, Wang (2007) found that granting individual officers the type of autonomy associated with community policing strategies was correlated with greater job satisfaction. To the extent that job satisfaction often leads to better police service and a greater commitment to ethical conduct, community policing methods may increase legitimacy both through its greater emphasis on

fairness-enhancing procedures and, indirectly, through improving police effectiveness by increasing officer's work motivation and strengthening police legality by increasing officer's commitment to lawfulness.

Sun and his colleagues (2013) demonstrated the importance of cross-cultural research by testing the relevance of procedural- versus outcome-based trust and of instrumental versus expressive models of trust in police in Taiwan. In both instances, the Taiwanese sample seemed to conflate these distinctive types to a much greater degree than observed in Western nations. This provides some impetus for using more comprehensive models of legitimacy that do not neglect the import of effectiveness, for example, or assume that procedural justice alone is the *sine qua non* of police legitimacy.

Expected Findings

From a review of relevant literature from Asia, there are a number of findings that one might expect to observe in the proposed study. First, there appear to be some transnational differences in how public opinions of police are formulated. These differences might arise from a number of contextual sources, such as government and legal structure, culture, national history, population homogeneity, dominant religious milieus, and even environmental factors, including degree of industrialization, resident density, and relative poverty. Broad observations of differences between the United States and Asian countries reveal a number of salient variations: American culture is individualistic, procedural justice and civil liberty are the civic values emphasized, the country has a great degree of ethnic and cultural diversity and policing is decentralized according to a federalist system of government, in which several sub-sovereigns exist within a larger federal jurisdiction. Meanwhile, most Asian governments are much more unitary, having much more centralized police forces, and presiding over a much more homogenous populace with a more communitarian worldview emphasizing collective ideals over individual goals.

Specifically, one might expect that a comparative study of the Bottoms-Tankebe model of police legitimacy will reveal discrepant degrees of importance in police lawfulness, fairness and effectiveness, with Americans concentrating on lawfulness and procedural fairness and South Koreans inclined to weigh distributive fairness and effectiveness more heavily. Nevertheless, some areas of convergence might also be discovered. Both in South Korea and in the United States, police

agencies have embarked on a number of initiatives designed to bridge divisions between uniformed law enforcement and the public, thus overall satisfaction may be relatively high in both countries. Both nations have significant variation in individual educational and living-standard achievement, each of which has been shown to be a significant factor in predicting one's satisfaction with police. Importantly, however, any expectations are, at best, speculative, because no study of the kind we propose has been conducted before. Therein lays the point: If comparison between nations leads to greater conceptual and practical understandings of police legitimacy, then the field has substantial ground to cover and this study is a necessary step toward that end.

References

- Blount-Hill, K. (in press, July 2016). A western welcome: A comparative review of Strangers No More and Why Muslim Integration Fails in Christian Heritage Societies. *International Affairs*.
- . (2016). Spheres of identity: Functional systems and the interconnectedness of institutional legitimacy. Manuscript in preparation.
- Blount-Hill, K., & Peirce, J. (2016). Curing cynicism: The effects of Cure Violence on legal cynicism and legitimacy crises. New York, NY: Research & Evaluation Center, John Jay College of Criminal Justice, City University of New York. Manuscript in preparation.
- Bottoms, A., & Tankebe, J. (2012). Beyond procedural justice: A dialogic approach to legitimacy in criminal justice. *The Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology*, 102: 1, 119-170.
- Cao, L. and Hou, C. (2001). A comparison of confidence in the police in China and in the United States. *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 29, 87-99.
- Cao, L. & Stack, S. (2005). Confidence in the police between America and Japan. *An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management*, 28(1), 139-155.
- Central Intelligence Agency. (2016). *The World Factbook*. Retrieved from <https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/resources/the-world-factbook/>
- Folger, R. (1996). Distributive and procedural justice: Multifaceted meanings and interrelations. *Social Justice Research*, 9: 4, 395-416.
- Hwang, E., McGarrell, E. F., & Benson, B. L. (2005). Public satisfaction with the South Korean police:

-
- The effect of residential location in a rapidly industrializing nation. *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 33, 585-599.
- Jackson, J., Hough, M., Farrall, S., Aromaa, K., & de Keijser, J. (2009). ESS5 Trust in justice module proposal. Retrieved from http://www.europeansocialsurvey.org/docs/round5/questionnaire/ESS5_jackson_proposal.pdf
- Jang, H. & Hwang, E. (2014). Confidence in the police among Korean people: An expressive model versus an instrumental model. *International Journal of Law, Crime and Justice*, 42, 306-323
- Lambert, E., Wu, Y., Jiang, S., Jaishankar, K., Pasupuleti, S., Bhimarasetty, J., & Smith, B. (2014). Support for community policing in India and the US: An exploratory study among college students. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management*, 37: 1, 3-29.
- Li, J. C. M., & Sun, I. Y. (2015). Satisfaction with the police: An empirical study of Chinese older citizens in Hong Kong. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management*, 38: 2, 381-399.
- Lo, C. W., & Cheuk, A. C. (2004). Community policing in Hong Kong: Development, performance and constraints. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management*, 27: 1, 97-127.
- Lowery, W. (2015, Oct. 26). FBI chief again says Ferguson having chilling effect on law enforcement. *The Washington Post*.
- Madan, M., & Nalla, M. (2015). Exploring citizen satisfaction with police in India: The role of procedural justice, police performance, professionalism, and integrity. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management*, 38: 1, 86-101.
- Schulhofer, S. J., Tyler, T. R., & Huq, A. Z. (2011). American policing at a crossroads: Unsustainable policies and the procedural justice alternative. *The Journal of Criminal Law and Criminology*, 101: 2, 335-374.
- Sun, I. Y., Jou, S., Hou, C. C., & Chang, Y. (2013). Public trust in the police in Taiwan: A test of instrumental and expressive models. *Australian & New Zealand Journal of Criminology*, 47: 1, 123-140.
- Tankebe, J., Reisig, M. D., & Wang, X. (2016). A multidimensional model of police legitimacy: A cross-cultural assessment. *Law and Human Behavior*, 40(1), 11-22.
- Tsushima, M. & Hamai, K. (2015). Public cooperation with the police in Japan: Testing the legitimacy model. *Journal of Contemporary Criminal Justice*, 1-17.
- Tyler, T. R. (2004). Enhancing police legitimacy. *The ANNALS of the American Academy of Political and Social Science*, 593, 84-99.
- Wang, Y. R. (2007). Patterns of community policing officers and their work: A study of the National Police Force of Taiwan. *International Journal of Police Science and Management*, 9: 1, 51-65.
- Wolfe, S. E. (2011). The effect of low self-control on perceived police legitimacy. *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 39, 67-74.
- Wu, Y. & Sun, I. Y. (2009). Citizen trust in police: The case of China. *Police Quarterly*, 12 (2), 170-191.

Cultural Impacts on Police Security: A Reflection on My Experience in China

Andrew Robinson

Sam Houston State University

Summary

This paper will be an exploration of applying an all hazards approach to a private factory setting in which the threat of intellectual property is dominant. The paper will first introduce the factory setting and explain the current one threat concern of information leakage. Following this introduction and reasoning of the need to focus on information leakage, the paper will explore various security methods with the primary role of securing information. Additionally, it will touch on how these methods can or are being used in ways to protect against other risks.

The importance of this exploration is to not just evaluate what is currently being done now, but to also look for solutions of the future. Each security method will be introduced in the sense that it exists within the factory. Afterwards, it will expose the strengths and weaknesses of the method and seek to find and propose solutions for the future.

The paper assessed 3 aspects of security at the factory; CCTV, access control, and screening. Issues were found in all three, but the screening section proved to show high risks of leakage through error-test results. Of the three, access control appeared to be the most utilized and experienced fewer issues. While CCTV is caught in a balance of having too much security to properly analyze. Screening is the only method which requires immediate change in order to deal with perceived issues.

Introduction to Setting

This paper examines security in a factory within China. This factory has a heavy reliance on a single stakeholder for profit, and produces upcoming products which the stakeholder wants to keep a secret at all costs. In terms of security, the stakeholder's policy is focused around the idea of zero leakage. As the stakeholder controls factory profit based on the amount of product they trust the factory to produce, the factory shares this same focus on zero leakage. In fact, the factory's first goal of everything is to satisfy the stakeholder, and therefore security is paramount.

While the factory and the stakeholder's satisfaction revolve around zero leakage in all aspects, there is definitely a higher consequence of leakage of new production as comparison to mass production. The stakeholder does not openly admit this, but the punishment involved with new product leakage is much higher than that of the mass production leakage. This is not unreasonable, as the cost of new product leakage could severely aide competitors in preparation for the stakeholder's end of the year launch. As a result, a majority of the information protection is focused at new production lines. Typically, this is only two factories of eight total. However, during July and August all eight factories are converted into new production factories. Therefore, most security measures for each factory need the ability to treat each situation with the goal of zero leakage.

Another important issue to address is the structure of the factory. There are two groups of guards: Guanzhi and Anqin. The Guanzhi are factory trained staff responsible for day to day operations, checking and testing security measures, and random screening in and out of traffic areas. The Anqin are a publicly trained group, that primarily handle issues outside of the factory and the screening process of people into factories and new production areas. The Guanzhi are monitored by the security team and the Anqin are monitored by the Anqin security team. The security team are the ones responsible for all security within the factory, and are the ones who manage and deal with the stakeholder's security preferences. The Anqin security team focuses on investigations and outside of the campus issues such as traffic monitoring, public disputes within the campus, and screening into and out of the factory. The difference of responsibilities is important, as the security team often needs to rely on Anqin for screening processes, and often tests them. However, both teams fall under the command of the Security Director. As a result, most new policies and responsibilities rely on the Security Director. The Security Director's primary role is to deal with the stakeholders by reporting to them and addressing any concerns they may have. I will be working directly with the Security Director.

The Security Director falls just below upper management of the factory, and is subject to the business model Key Point Index (KPI). The security team's KPI is zero leakage, and as part of the business model are required to turn in reports to show their progress of the KPI. As a result, a large part of the security team time is paperwork and preparing reports of current standings of policies.

The environment of stakeholder dependency and KPI-driven security has resulted in a responsive style security catering to the stakeholder requests. Often the process of change reflects the pattern of the stakeholder requesting a policy fixed within a week. This often results in a rushed single purpose solution. When more time is available, more effective and efficient solutions can be found. Therefore, this paper will seek to explore all possible issues, and seek to find multi-purpose solutions which cover a wide variety of security concerns and various other benefits. The goal of this process is to find a multitude of exploratory ideas to draw on in moments of rushed solutions, or provide a basis on which to start some new pro-active policies.

This paper will seek to explore the three core security methods involved within the factory: Closed Circuit Television (CCTV), access control, and screening. The focus of solutions and improvements will be catered towards the factory setting previously described. However, the methods in which the security methods touch on multiple hazards are something which can be generalized.

CCTV

The factory's CCTV reflects the factory's massive size which is comparable to a college campus. In fact, there are two CCTV systems, one for the Guanzhi (inside the factory) and one for the Anqin (around the factories and the campus). For the purposes of this paper, the CCTV section will just focus on the Guanzhi. Until recently, the Guanzhi and Anqin CCTV used to be in the same centralized room, but now the Guanzhi has separated and moved their CCTV system into a centralized room within a factory.

The stakeholders require designated CCTV cameras in certain areas of the factory, specifically in areas which the products are transferred or are stored. However, four years ago the factory wished to be able to follow all steps of any suspect and installed more cameras than required. As a result, the factory now has over 4,000 cameras just within the factories. In accordance with Kruegle (2007), the factory's implementation revolves around the belief that CCTV systems provide a means for successfully

detering theft, but also aide in response through detection and apprehension.

Multi-hazard purpose

CCTV systems help in a multitude of ways. Their use supports emergency plans, investigations, employee training and education, safety, and the role of guards. In terms of emergency plans CCTV can constantly protect information assets during times of evacuation. Additionally, it documents the emergency and the response to the emergency. As a result, it is allowed to offer valuable information in terms of investigation and future training.

In terms of investigation, CCTV can be invaluable in presenting physical evidence. It allows for the team to trace the movements of a suspect or physically identify a suspect. The investigation via CCTV allows for the security team to successfully solve the case, and identify weaknesses to learn from.

The identified weaknesses can be used as future training tools to provide visual aides to staff. CCTV can show consequences of misapplied techniques and the benefits of proper planning and execution. In the end, the CCTV can act as very accurate case study examples to show staff during training.

Another use of the CCTV is to measure that safety training is being followed. Our facility uses the CCTV system to watch Guanzhi as they conduct safety inspections. However, the system can also be used to observe common procedures of safety. Any violations can be immediately documented via the CCTV recording and used to show corrective actions.

Having a work force of 100,000 employees, it is difficult to find a proper amount of guards to supply a sufficient ratio of monitoring. Therefore, CCTV can be used as a force multiplier, as a cheaper and more cost efficient form of monitoring. Additionally, it helps focus the efficiency of the guards by keeping their usage in key areas⁴.

Issues

The largest issue with CCTV revolves around the fact that there is just too much unstructured data to be efficiently used. While CCTV is a cost efficient option to compromise for guards, the cost of 4,000 plus cameras does add up. Consequent of the abundance of cameras, the data received is overwhelming to a point where it is almost more burdensome than beneficial. Additionally, the costs to maintain, store data, and upgrade the system

4 Kruegle, H. (2007).

is adding up. While the CCTV is used, the question of how much of it is used effectively is raised. To optimize the use of video technology, the practitioner and end user must understand all aspects from light sources to video monitors and recorders⁵.

Due to the massive size of the factory, the company saves costs on lighting. Additionally, the factory runs 24 hours 6 days a week. Therefore, the CCTV is under constant changing of lighting conditions. While this is not a large issue to the human eye, any future improvements which rely on video analytics will require more constant lighting levels.

Potential Improvements

All future improvements proposed involve fixing the issue of lighting, but both also address the issue of having too much unusable data. Two forms of technology which could benefit the factory are big data analysis and video analytics. While big data analysis focuses on making use of stored data, video analytics allows for real-time and after the fact solutions.

80% of the world's data is unstructured, and the data is generally not used to the company's advantage. Big data analysis is a solution which seeks to fix this issue. Big data analysis is the combination of older and newer solutions, in which breaks down the data into the three characteristics of volume, velocity, and variety. The volume is the defining factor of the term "big" in big data analysis. However, velocity and variety define the analysis portion of "big data analysis". The velocity refers to the speed which data is generated and variety is the different types of data⁶. Big data analysis does not only apply to CCTV, it can apply to any form of data which the factory collects. Therefore, it can not only help analyze recorded CCTV for more efficient investigations, but also is able to collect data for safety and various other needs. Specifically, the factory could use advanced analytic algorithms for complex unstructured data in order to establish predictive models and other patterns of employees⁷. Developing or improving this capacity should be further explored.

Video analytics is more of a CCTV specific security method. While it shares some similarities with big data analysis in terms of using unstructured data for analysis, it also can provide real-time alerts and video focused solutions. Currently, the gap between user's expectations and the intelligent video

analysis capabilities is still wide⁸. It may not identify threats consistently enough for factory needs. Additionally, due to the poor CCTV environment of improper lighting at the factory, this is a solution which may be something to consider once the software's analysis technology improves its ability to detect lesser quality feeds. Until then, the factory can work towards making changes in terms of CCTV quality and lighting in preparation of future technologies. As part of the internship, a meeting with a intelligent video analysis company showed this gap of expectations. Being a white male with red hair, in China, the system was unable to properly track me due to lighting conditions and camera quality⁹.

Access control

Access control plays a large role in addressing the risk to intellectual property. It is the first and last line of defense of any information being leaked. Among the three security methods being discussed in this exploration, access control is by far the most complex.

Access control can secure intellectual property in both the physical and cyber realm. An Access control systems exist to authenticate select user's access into areas which plausibly contain information. The factory implements 3 integrated strategies of verifying those with access; user ID and password, a physical security device, and biometric verification¹⁰. The entire physical process revolves around the worker's physical ID badge, and the cyber process revolves around ID and passwords. To access any physical location, the worker's ID badge is required. However, to enter any factory, the addition of facial recognition biometrics is used to grant access. The IT team handles the management and permissions of the access control system, with the security team doing backgrounds checks and advising on permission roles.

An individual's roles dictate their access in both the physical and cyber realm. A low access role may allow limited access into some areas of the factory, and won't even allow them to apply for a laptop. Mid-level roles allow for access to the factory, plus some additional areas pertinent to their work. They are also allowed access to laptops, but have limited online access privileges. Each laptop has the camera removed, and security programs which disable data transfer via ports, e-mailing outside of the office, and

5 Kruegle, H. (2007).

6 Trnka, A. (2014).

7 Trnka, A. (2014).

8 Xu, L. (2007).

9 "It may not identify threats consistently enough for factory needs."

10 Agile Data (2013).

e-mailing filed over 8mb. IT highly monitors the use of laptops, and offers reports to the stakeholders. Higher roles consist of much more access, in the factory and online, but all new product areas required special approved access.

This control allows the security team to control and monitor individuals who enter and leave the factory. Additionally, they are able to monitor who has access to what devices, and the devices are distributed and maintained to a cyber policy developed by the stakeholder.

Multi-hazard purpose

Within the factory, the access control system widely serves a number of purposes. The access control ID badges have been used to facilitate quality of life, aid in investigation, and act as a method of punching in and out of work.

The badges act as the worker's key to every service on the factory campus. The factory's campus encompasses over 20 dorms, more than 10 cafeterias, 4 super markets, and various night markets and entertainment buildings. All of these aspects in some form utilize the access control badge. While there are 20 plus dorms on campus there are contracted off-campus dorms as well, to surge employees for the peak season. Each of these dorms on and off campus requires that the employee scans their badge on entry and exit. Additionally, for dorms off campus, and other areas off campus, the factory provides shuttle buses which also requires the worker's ID badge to be swiped coming on and off of the bus. The ID badge also acts as a worker's debit card within the campus. With a direct link to each worker's salary, the card deducts from their salary whenever they wish to eat at the cafeteria, buy some items at the super market, enjoy some clubs, or even go to the arcade/pc bang (all of these are on campus). This ease of access allows workers to live easier, and has greatly increased retention and worker's satisfaction since implementation.

- The investigative benefit of the constant swiping of ID badges also allows for constant monitoring of employees. If the factory needs to find someone, they simply type in a worker's ID and view their recent access. However, people do sometimes go off the campus on Sundays and holidays, but it is not a common occurrence. Therefore, where tracking of movements is not possible, the factory will have the reports of when they left the campus or their dormitory and can set up an alert of when they return.

As with the badges, the facial recognition can serve multiple roles. The facial recognition was developed to ensure that people must enter the factory and attendance by swiping their ID badge and receive a facial scan. This system has been used to ensure that people aren't cheating attendance, and that they are the proper person to enter the factory. Each entrance to the factory requires a facial scan, and when it is time to finish work the person must use a facial scan within the factory.

Issues

In comparison to the other two security methods being discussed, the factory's access control has few issues. As for issues of security, the largest identified issues revolve around the facial recognition verification. First, biometric security services tend to be expensive¹¹. Second, they tend to be a little less accurate in comparison to fingerprints when used among mass amounts of people¹².

The factory currently gives more weight to cost than quality. They have chosen a 6-point biometric facial scan, less expensive but less accuracy in verification. While future methods can seek to increase the accuracy, the cost efficiency involved with enhancing work ID badge scans appears favorable.

Potential Improvements

Currently, the IT team is working to implement a reporting program to detect abnormal attendances. This program is designed to increase work efficiency by automatically catching abuses of work hours. The program involves several formulas, regarding logging in a meal after starting work, or leaving the campus during work hours, and several other very detailed formulas. The point is to create a scenario in which the access control system can automatically report an abnormal attendance, but also not over report people who leave with reason. Currently, the system is over reporting, and the IT team is searching ways to refine the amount of reports.

Such a system could also aid in security by developing patterns matching an insider threat. Banker, Eveleigh, Holzer and Sarkani (2016) wrote about a systems approach theory which can predict an insider threat via the access control system. Using their systematic approach, with the combination of data provided by the ID badge reports, the factory could establish a unique system to predict the insider threat.

11 Sukhai, N. (2005).

12 National Institute of Science and Technology (2002).

Screening

Screening within the factory is broken into two sections with differing levels of screening based on mass or new production areas. However, both sections of screening are manned by Anqin guards and tested and maintained by the Guanzhi guards. In the mass production factories there is just initial screening into and out of the factory, the purpose is to limit the ease of which people can steal mass produced products. However, when it comes to new production areas the security gets more serious. Screening is the biggest method of which to detect, prevent, and deter any forms of physical leakage of critical parts. While entry and exit into the factory is the same into every factory, there is a secondary screening into all new production areas. This screening consists of the same screening policies of checking phones, IDs, putting laptops and other items through the x-ray machine, and any other miscellaneous items. But the new production area's screening also implements an ID badge card swipe to ensure access and random phone checks. The random phone checks consist of scanning the sticker to bring up the worker's profile which includes a picture of their phone and face. Additionally, some items are just banned from entering the area; laptops, smartphones, and large items without security director clearance. The overall goal is monitor what comes in and what goes out, to ensure no critical parts are captured via a recording devices or physically taken out of the factory.

New production areas undergo randomized security tests called error-tests. These tests use old parts similar to other critical parts and attempt to sneak the parts past new product screening areas. The results are recorded and logged. Further discussion of the error-tests will be addressed in the upcoming issues section. It is clear that the existence of screening is predominately for the purpose of intellectual property in a factory setting, but screening in general poses other security benefits.

Multi-hazard purpose

In the United States, metal detector door and x-ray machine screening checkpoints are used in urban schools in areas with chronic weapons offenses¹³ and airports. Therefore, it does act as a method to detect items which could be used to harm others, but the reality of screening is simple in thought; it exists to control what comes in and goes out. What you control going in and out is what has the capability of multi-hazard security. If the screening controls weapons, it controls the threat

13 National School Safety and Security Services (2016).

of violence. If it controls who may enter, it assists in access control. It is a point which allows the factory to create an air gap of anything perceived as hazardous entering the factory, or taking anything perceived as critical/sensitive out.

Issues

In order to evaluate the issues, I conducted my own experiment and used company collected data of error-tests to really evaluate the company's issues in relation to screening. The findings were:

- The top two error-test failures were hiding items in ID badge holders and teamwork between people.
- High first time failure rates.
- Screening time it too long according to the stakeholder's Code of Conduct.
- The Anqin are burdened with unreasonable policy and get backed up/avoid policy to check items.
- Clustering of people at detector door entrances.
- There is no reporting of faulty detector doors.

Company error test

Due to the information not being mine, I got permission to just discuss the top two threats and the sample size; with brief mention of how the tests are conducted. The company collected data is the collection of a year's worth of error tests; more than 600 tests. Hiding items in clothing and larger items had a relatively low fail rate, but passing items through the detector with teamwork and hiding items in the badge holder ranged from a 15-20% failure rate. After conducting my own experiment, the reasons for these failure rates became clear.

Screening experiment issues

My experiment was an observation of CCTV recordings of the screening process. The parameters I set were observing the process during peak hours, with a constant flow of workers for 5 minutes. I used factory 4 as a standard for my experiment, and hope to carry out the experiment in other factories in the future. However, the screening SOP (standard operating procedures) is universal throughout the company and many issues found can be assumed to be universal. The experiment kept track of how many people a door could screen in 5 minutes, and also kept track of failure attempts and general observations. Below are a few graphics from the findings:

Table 1 Failure Findings

	Total	Avg Per
1 Fail	137	5.269231
2 Fails	22	0.846154
3 Fails +	11	0.423077

Table 2 Average of failures and time through screening

	Avg
Ppl through in seconds	4.598959
Avg fail rate	0.102182

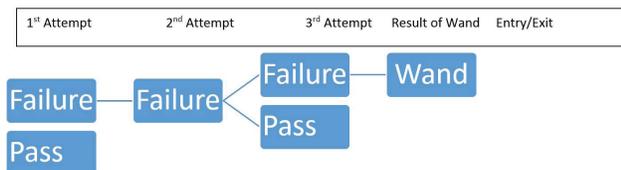


Figure 1 Process flow chart of failures

- First, Table 1 represents the total and average amount of failures. What is notable is the abundance of first time failures and severally reduced second and third time failures. From observation, the reason for failures is because of one of four things:

- The metal detector door picked up the small metal on the ID badge holder.
- The person possessed an item they should have given the Anqin.
- Their clothing had metal.
- People hit the metal detector door while going through.

The issue with all of these failures is the contribution to extended screening times and clustering at the metal detector door entrance.

- The issue of extended screening times is of more concern than it sounds, because the Code of Conduct set by the stakeholder demands no body spend longer than 15 minutes in a whole screening process. That means, for new product areas the person needs to get through both screening points in a total of 15 minutes. According to Table 2, current predictions with the average person taking approximately 4.6 seconds during a peak season of 2,500 people

I calculate 11 detector doors would take more than 25 minutes for just one point.

- Clustering at the entrance is a Chinese cultural phenomenon; if you have ever been to China you will learn the concept of lines is non-existent. People mindlessly keep shuffling forward which causes a grouping around entrances. A failure causes everything to slow down and a pack of people to gather at the entrance. This group of people will all at once throw their ID badges and phones to the Anqin guard and go through the metal detector door as fast as they can. This right here is a large reason for the two highest error-test failures of cooperation and using ID badge holders to hide small critical parts. The Anqin get handed too many items which leads to the guards focusing on the items handed to them rather than the people going through. Additionally, the abundance of items combined with pressure from masses of people urging the Anqin to hurry leads to the negligence of the SOP for fully checking IDs and phones. Therefore, an environment is created where the Anqin cannot focus on those coming through the metal detector door and also cannot reasonably check the incoming items according to the SOP. Throughout my experiment, I noted at least four cases where the metal detector door alarm was triggered but the person was not noticed and kept going. This is a large issue.
- The flow chart in Figure 1 represents the meaning of the different failures, in order to determine what is responsible for the various levels of repeated failures. An attempt one failure means the person failed once and passed on the second attempt. Through observation, the predominant one attempt failures were solved by taking their ID badge off or taking an item out of their pocket. Therefore, treating these two, in order to reduce the predominant rate of one time failures, would be one focus to treating the issues of first time failures. Second attempt failures were predominately due to ID badges (not being taken off the first time) or clothing. Third attempt failures are assumed as issues with clothing and the detector being overly sensitive. I requested any reports of critical parts found as a result of security wand, which was reported as zero. This means that the failures were likely due to clothing, as anything (in theory) trying to be stolen should have been detected via the wand and reported according to the SOP.
- What's important is that the flowchart showed that there is no clear path for the ID badge, sometimes you can go through with

it and sometimes you can't. Additionally, it can be assumed that there is no warning of emptying pockets prior to going through the metal detector based on observation and high first failure rates.

- Lastly, I wanted to note a very disturbing observation. There was a faulty metal detector (which I had to remove the data collected from the experiment due to it being an outlier) which kept being used despite being broken for the entire month. The detector was not broken (I checked), the threshold was just set to a point so low where no metal could pass (uniforms have a small metal zipper). The SOP is that Guanzhi test the machines twice a day for accurate ranges of detection (they only check once a week). Also, the SOP says to just test with a 1 yuan coin (as per the stakeholder's recommendation). Therefore, as long as the alarm detects the coin the detector is seen as adequate, but they do nothing to test if the detector is picking up too much (ideally it should pick up the smallest of items, but due to factory uniform it is not a reality). What is really is of concern though, is that the Anqin would keep using this detector every day and keeping other lanes closed (despite averaging 10 people every 5 minutes) and never reported the issue to the Guanzhi.

Potential Improvements

The screening issues are quite overwhelming and of high risk (even the stakeholders have taken recent notice). I originally approached this experiment with the assumption that metal in the uniform was to blame. The SOP of the stakeholder dictates that uniforms have no metal and the detector doors can pick up at the very least a 1 yuan coin (there is no mention of a lower threshold). Therefore, I thought the small metal in uniforms were the larger cause of the failures involved with the screening system. However, the combination of the experiment and the error-test data really opened my eyes to just how much bigger of a risk our screening process poses.

At the request of my boss's constant questioning of "what's the solution?" I came up with a method which would not only aid in the screening method, but other areas of security as well; an all hazards approach. I wanted to look for a solution which would be simple and effective. Currently, there is a large reliance on the Anqin, and most punishment is just re-training. Therefore, I wanted a solution which was less reliant on human training. From the experiment, I came to the conclusion that the Anqin are currently tasked with too much. Therefore, to aid

the Anqin I proposed four relatively easy changes as a solution:

- Provide non-metal ID holders.
- Completely remove non-feature phones from inside the factory (by October).
 - A feature phone (dumb phone) is a phone without a camera or access to apps.
- Begin purchasing work shirts with plastic zippers (slowly replace over-time).
- Use Guanzhi to enforce 2 meters behind the door and remind people to empty pockets.

Plastic ID badges

A reoccurring factor across all of the issues is the worker ID badge. There is a SOP to check the badge, but it is not mandatory to be given to the Anqin. Additionally, it was a large factor of first failure rates for those who never know if it will be able to pass or not. However, the badge would take up too much time either via causing a metal detector door failure or being thrown to the Anqin in piles. Therefore, by implementing a policy where people wear their ID badges via plastic holders through the metal detector, the detector would be able to pick up any critical parts within the holder. Additionally, it would clear up the amount of items the Anqin needs to focus on and can increase their focus on people coming through the gate. These two aspects can contribute greatly in reducing the two high risks of the error-test.

Feature phones

However, most leaks have been from photos taken by a phone with a camera being snuck past an Anqin guard. Recently, we just passed a policy to only allow feature phones in new product areas. However, in October all factories will turn into new product areas. Therefore, I requested of my bosses to start implementing this policy universally for all factories and control which models are allowed. Currently, there are two proposals to obtain feature phones.

Prior to talking about the two policies, I want to mention that this would only apply to certain lower level employees, and it is something which will have to be implemented by stakeholder request by October. While I have been working on this policy for a while, the stakeholders recently demanded that all new production areas have feature phones only (they gave a day to do so). The goal of my proposal is to try and get ahead of stakeholder demands, and prepare for "the ramping" up to the peak season where all factories become new production lines. Also, for

thematic purposes of this paper, I considered but will not discuss worker's levels of unrest, work efficiency improvements (no chatting apps), HR responsibility, and liabilities.

- Knowing that the company is a private business, I proposed that the company buy/produce the phones in mass for an exception discount (50 RMB a phone). With this, they could sell the phones for a "discounted" price to factory workers at 60 RMB each, and use this profit to purchase the plastic ID badge holders. This method allowed the company to establish a standard phone for everyone to use and identify. One flaw is the responsibility the company may have to replace any broken phones, and I recommended just have people sign a contract to claim responsibility. But it seems that in China these things are not of an issue, and the person would just be asked to purchase another one.

The benefit of this, is that it is a rare chance in which security can turn actual profit, and that it establishes a standardized phone. The profit can be put towards more security (the plastic ID badge holders) and the standardization will increase detection and Anqin efficiency at screening. Also, the control would ensure the phones are 100% feature phones.

- The second, more moral solution is to recommend brand names for the workers to purchase and actively seek those who have not come to replace their sticker with a new feature phone. Additionally, this method would require signage and notification of the person's responsibility to exchange their phone.

This proposal was the one applied as a quick solution to the stakeholder's demands. It offers more standardization than before, but not as much as the previous solution. And it costs the company no funds to require the workers to purchase the phones.

The point of these proposals is that it again decreases the time Anqin needs to focus on phones during screening, but also reduces the risk of phones with cameras being taken into or used within the factory.

Uniform replacement

Prior to the experiment, I thought this would be a much bigger issue and the solution would be replacing the uniform. However, I have since concluded it is minor in regards to other issues. Yet, the company does purchase new uniforms quarterly. Therefore, I believe by purchasing future uniforms with no metal, they will slowly take over the current

uniforms with metal. The solution was simple, saved some money on quarterly purchases, and would contribute to fewer failures of metal detectors.

Guanzhi usage

There are generally issues with manpower of security; however peak hours always have Guanzhi present to "monitor" people going through. By changing their SOP to enforce the already marked lines to wait 2 meters behind the metal detector doors and remind people to check pockets for metal would mesh well with all the other changes. This would get rid of the clustering, eliminate cooperation of stealing critical parts, allow the Anqin more organization to focus on person by person, greatly reduce first time failures (in combination with plastic ID badge holders), and contribute to an overall faster time for screening (failures from bumping into the metal detector was often because two people would try to go through at once).

Benefits of the four solutions together

These four simple solutions contribute little by little in their own regard, but when viewing them all together it provides a smooth screening process. With these all implemented, Anqin would just be handed a standardized phone and would be able to keep pace with people passing through. Failures would be significantly reduced. People would pass through quicker (less items to give and receive, less failures to wait on). The Guanzhi will have more control and there will be more overall eyes on the people rather than the handled items. These four simple things would result in an increase in work time and efficiency through quicker screening and less stressed workers (more profit). Additionally, security would experience great reduction in risk and an increase in awareness.

Conclusion

Security in the private sector is generally based around the issue of money. In accordance with security driven by a stakeholder's demands and a KPI business model results in an environment which is always playing catch-up with security policies. This exploration is meant to evaluate the policies currently in place, offer solutions to current issues, and offer guidance of ways to improve the use of already established policies. Most of these policies are utilizing already paid for methods, and or use the stakeholder's needs as a method to encourage further monetary policy change.

CCTV, access control, and screening, are the three most established security policies at the factory. They were initially established with the goal of information security. As a result of this paper, it is the hopes that these 3 aspects can adapt to the all-hazards approach and greatly reduce the current risks that exist. The current practiced method of reacting to stakeholder concerns is unhealthy and leads to rash and single-focused decisions. The KPI responsibility leads to over-reporting and generally false information to produce numbers to meet the business needs. These two issues are not fully explored in this paper, and may need to be addressed in the future.

This exploration focuses on making the best out of a tough situation. Further exploration could focus on the curing of the situation. Things such as security structure, security culture, and other more long-term fixes. This paper's exploration is the first step in freeing up time to take the next step in progressing current security methods. This exploration provides guidance to pro-actively and reactively deal with stakeholder needs and open up room to focus on self-improvement.

References

- Agile Data (2013). Implementing Security Access Control. Retrieved from: <http://www.agiledata.org/essays/accessControl.html>
- Branker, J., Eveleigh, T., Holzer, T. H., & Sarkani, S. (2016). Access control, identity management and the insider threat. *Journal Of Airport Management*, 10(2), 180-199
- Kruegle, H. (2007). *CCTV surveillance; analog and digital video practices and technology*. Amsterdam: Butterworth-Heinemann.
- National Institute of Science and Technology (2002). Summary of NIST standard for biometric accuracy, tamper resistance, and interoperability. Retrieved from: http://biometrics.nist.gov/cs_links/pact/NISTAPP_Nov02.pdf
- National School Safety and Security Services (2016). School metal detectors. Retrieved from: <http://www.schoolsecurity.org/trends/school-metal-detectors/>
- Sukhai, N. (2005). Access control & biometrics. Retrieved from: <http://web2.utc.edu/~Li-Yang/cpsc4600/access-control-biometrics-p124-sukhai.pdf>
- Trnka, A. (2014). Big data analysis. *European Journal of Science and Theology*. October 2014, Vol. 10, Suppl. 1, 143-148
- Xu, L. (2007). Issues in video analytics and surveillance systems: research/ prototyping vs. applications/ user requirements. British Telecommunications Research and Venturing, Group Chief Technology Office.

Digital Forensics in the Panda Case*

Yonghao, Mai, Hubei University of Police, China

Jun, Zhang, Hubei University of Police, China

Shufang, Yang, Hubei University of Police, China**

Abstract

This paper introduced the dynamic of electronic forensic identification both in China and abroad and proposed its categories and hierarchies. By analyzing the three legal bases and three technical foundations of electronic forensic identification, it indicated that this kind of examination could be both quantitative and qualitative, and its process could be precisely reproduced. Based on the writer's experience in dealing with the Panda virus, this paper mainly discussed the legal scheme, technical scheme, and practical implementation plan in handling the case, as well as the identification working environment, and the supervision of the chain of evidence. The architecture of electronic forensic identification was proposed, which could unite the legal and technical aspects of this type of identification.

Keywords: electronic data forensics; categories and hierarchies; architecture; Panda case

1. Introduction

Digital forensics is key to the trial and measurement of penalty in computer-related crimes, thus it is a hot issue in the digital era. With its high-tech properties such as modifiability, instantaneity, reliance on the equipment, and its precise repeatability, electronic forensic identification is both a legal and technical issue. We should integrate its particularity with its universality, and study on the evidence investigation, acquisition, preservation, application, examination and conformation, to secure the objectivity, legality and relevancy of the electronic evidence.

2. Status Report on Digital Evidence Identification

The Scientific Working Group on Digital Evidence (SWGDE) under the International Organization on Computer Evidence (IOCE) held the International Hi-Tech Crime and Forensics Conference in London, October, 1999. This conference put forward the relevant standards and principles of digital evidence. Around 2000, experts proposed several typical process models in dealing with digital evidence: Basic Process Model, Incident Response Process

Model, Law Enforcement Process Model, Abstract Process Model, etc. Agencies and companies outside China, such as NTI, Computer Forensics Inc., and Guidance Software, have developed tools like Winhex, Encase, DIBS, and Flight Server. 70% of the law departments in US have their own E-electronic laboratories. Experts from Hubei University of Police (HUP) were invited to the 2013 ADFSL Conference on Digital Forensics, Security and Law (Richmond, Virginia, US), and in their first report they introduced the current status of China's digital evidence examination, proposing the hierarchical model of e-evidence identification. ISO/IEC JTC1/SC27 released The Fitness for Purpose of Analytical Methods (ISO/IEC 27041) on 18th, April, 2013, and planned to release A Guidance to the Analysis of Electronic Evidence (ISO/IEC 27042), and The Principles and Process of Investigation (ISO/IEC 27043) in 2015. This field is developing with each passing day. In November, 2005, China established CCFC and held the first seminar. Chinese Academy of Sciences held the Workshop on International Digital Evidence in August, 2010. In December, 2011, the Ministry of Justice organized universities, law enforcements, judicial agencies, military and national security agencies to work with HUP, and published the training material Practice of Electronic Evidence Identification. HUP, together with Hong Kong University and Wuhan Institution of Engineering Science and Technology held in Wuhan the "Forum on Digital Evidence Identification" in November, 2013. And in May 2015, the national "Forum

* This research is funded by National High Technology Research and Development Program of China (863 Program) (No. 2015AA017204).

** Corresponding Author.

on Theories and Practice of Electronic Evidence Identification” was held in Shanghai. In recent year, the public security agencies, procuratorial agencies, security and military systems have opened all kinds of training sessions in terms of digital forensics. CNAS and the Ministry of Justice have started the certification and accreditation of the e-evidence examination practitioners. This field is becoming increasingly dynamic in China.

3. Categories and Hierarchies of the Digital Forensics

When it comes to the new type of evidence derived from modern information technology, the judicial circles around the world proposed various kinds of terminology, such as “electronic forensics”, “computer forensics”, “digital forensics”, “network forensics”, etc. In Taiwan, China, it is called “electronic physical evidence.

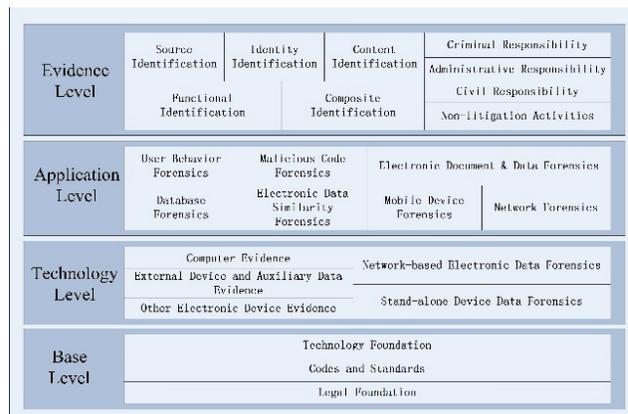
In mainland China, we prefer the term “electronic physical evidence identification”, which put such evidence in the category of traditional evidence. In college education, the term “computer forensics” is more popular, which reveals its relevance to computer science and technology. Scientific research institutions and procuratorial agencies favor the name “digital forensic investigation” due to its popularity in its foreign counterpart agencies. While courts use more often the term “electronic evidence identification” to highlight the importance of evidence, the judicial system applies “electronic data expertise” which considers judicial expertise as a new realm.

The writer thinks that digital forensics is an interdisciplinary subject involving both laws and regulations, and scientific technology. It can be categorized into different types according to different bases of classification, such as its layer of evidence, application, technology and foundation, with one layer being independent from the others. The combination of the specific features of each layer reflects the position and role of digital evidence in the legal procedures. Graph 1 shows the categories and hierarchies of digital evidence.

In the perspective of the layer of application, the writer adopted the term “electronic evidence identification”, considering it a subject to research the laws and regulations as well as scientific technologies in terms of how to obtain, preserve, analyze and present this evidence.

In the perspective of the layer of evidence, “electronic evidence identification” refers to the activities in which the appraisers apply the theories and technologies of computer science and expertise,

to examine and judge the specific issues involved in legal procedures, and finally give expert opinions.



Graph 1 Categories and hierarchies of digital evidence

4. Legal Foundation of the Electronic Evidence Identification

4.1 Electronic evidence as the newest type of legal evidence

The amended Criminal Procedure Law, and Civil Procedure Law of the PRC were enacted since January 1st, 2013. The amended Administrative Procedure Law of PRC took effect since May 1st, 2015. These laws confirmed that digital evidence is considered as evidence in any legal proceeding.

4.2 The development and perfection of laws related to digital evidence

Article 285 and 286 of the Criminal Law of PRC stipulate the following six computer-related crime charges:(1) crime of illegal intrusion into computer information system;(2) crime of sabotaging functions of a computer information system;(3) crime of damaging computer information system data and application program;(4) crime of producing, disseminating of computer viruses and other destructive procedures;(5) crime of being hackers;(6) crime of providing hacking tools. Article 287 illustrates and summarizes other crimes involving the use of computer to commit crimes such as fraud, theft, corruption, embezzlement, stealth of State secret. There are more than a hundred kinds of such crime charges. Besides, the Civil Procedure Law and Administrative Procedure Law are facing increasing social demands. Areas such as E-government, E-commerce, network finance, industrial and agricultural production, social service, people’s

livelihood and privacy are calling for legal protection from the government.

In order to meet the needs of the judicial practice, and clearly define the application of laws against the crime of endangering the safety of computer information system, the Supreme People's Court, together with the Supreme People's Procuratorate, jointly issued *A Number of Issues on the Application of the Law on the Handling of Criminal Cases involving the crime of endangering the safety of computer information system* (hereinafter referred to as Issues), and enacted it in September 1st, 2011. Article 9 of the Issues addresses specifically the problem of accomplice in the crime of endangering the safety of computer information system. there are mainly three types of joint crime:(1) those who knows that the other person is carrying out the crime of destroying computer information system, but still provides him\her with the program and tool for destroying the function, data or application program of computer information system; (2) those who knows the other person is committing the crime against computer information system security, but still provides him\her with the Internet access, server hosting, network storage space, communication channel, cost settlement, trading services, advertising services, technical training, technical support and other help; (3) those who knows the other person is committing the crime against computer information system security, but still provides him/her with funds by entrusting them to produce promotion software, advertising and other ways.

4.3 Electronic data forensics is the latest and particularly specified identification

Compared with traditional forensic identification, forensic identification and audio-visual information identification, electronic forensic identification is based on the needs of the proceedings, and is the latest and particularly specified identification by the Judicial Administrative Department of the State Council, the Supreme People's Court, and the Supreme People's Procuratorate. With the development of social informatization, big data, cloud computing, Internet of things and mobile terminals, are widely applied. Flow of people, logistics, financial flow, information flow, administrative flow, management and manufacturing flow, etc., have generated vast electronic data, which resembles multi-dimensional characteristics like time, space, events, the relationship between people, the motivations and consequences. The data is easy to access and trace, and the scene can be

reconstructed. Forensic identification of electronic data can prove the fact of the criminal cases, administrative cases and civil cases, and also serve the non litigation activities.

4.4 Main target content of examination

On 1 July 2010, the implementation of "The provisions on reviewing issues of handling of evidence by the Supreme People's Court, Supreme People's Procuratorate, Ministry of Public Security, the Ministry of National Security, the Ministry of Justice on handling death penalty cases" recommended proper procedure when handling the following types of electronic evidence: electronic mails, electronic data interchange, Internet chat records, Internet blogs, mobile phone SMS, digital signature, domain names, etc. The procedure should include the following:(1)whether the storage media of the electronic evidence, such as hard disks, optical disks are submitted together with the printed copy of the electronic evidence; (2) whether the formation about the time and place of collection, the person that performs the collection and the collection steps, and the equipment used, etc. are specified; (3) whether the process on acquiring, storing, transferring, and presentation of the electronic evidence is in a proper and legal way; whether the person that collects, produces the electronic evidence, the owner of the electronic evidence, and corresponding witnesses have signed or chopped; (4) whether the integrity of the electronic evidence is ensured, and whether the electronic evidence has not been tampered, modified or artificially created; (5) whether the electronic evidence is related to the case. When there is doubt on analyzing the electronic evidence, the judicial expert should perform additional integrity and relevance checking by considering related evidence of the case.

4.5 The extensive carrier of electronic data---computer information system and digital equipment

The State Council issued the Regulations of PRC on the Protection of Computer Information System Security (No.147) in February, 18th, 1994., stipulates that computer information system refers to the computer and its related equipment, facilities (including network), performing the information collection, processing, storage, transmission, retrieval according to a certain application objectives and rules.

With the development of information technology, all kinds of digital devices which can produce and install programs with its operating system, have been widely used in various fields.

There is very few difference between the nature of the digital devices and computer information system or computer system. Therefore digital devices should be included in the scope of protection of the Criminal Law. Based on this, the Supreme People's Court and the Supreme People's Procuratorate jointly issued the A Number of Issues on the Application of the Law on the Handling of Criminal Cases involving the crime of endangering the safety of computer information system and enacted it in September 1st, 2011. By using the method of explanation and generalization, the computer information system and computer system are defined as "the systems including computer, network equipment, communication equipment, automatic control equipment, etc., which have the function of automatic data processing."

Among them, network equipment refers to "the equipment which is used to connect the network equipment"; communication equipment refers to equipment which provides communication services, such as mobile phone, communication base station, etc., which is used in the industry. Automation control equipment refers to equipment in the industry for the implementation of automatic control, such as monitoring equipment in the power system, the assembly line control equipment in manufacturing, etc. Issues provide a solid legal basis for the widely used digital devices, such as mobile phones, smart mobile terminals, car networking and Internet of things, etc. in various fields.

5. Technical Basis Electronic Forensic Identification

The author believes that the technical basis of the forensic identification of electronic data includes three technical methods: read only, cloning and verification. They ensure that the forensic identification of electronic data can be both qualitative and quantitative, and it can be accurately reproduced at any time.

(1) Read-only can be realized through the method of software and hardware. The purpose is only to read the test material, without changing it. And it is designed to protect electronic data from being altered, so as to ensure that the primitiveness of the data for further retest.

(2) Cloning is to clone the content of the hard disk to the clone hard disk with the help of the hard copy machine, during which the integrity of the original data will not be damaged or modified. Because this is Niche clone, the content in the hard disk will be fully reflected in the cloning, including the deleted file, the unallocated space, the print buffer, data residue area and file fragments, without

anything lost, omitted, or modified, so that we could examine only the cloning of hard disk. If someone has doubts about the evidence can be, they can go through relevant legal procedures, and repeat the identification process in the presence of the judicial personnel, witnesses and related parties by extracting the original samples, removing the seal, and then repeating the new clone hard disk.

(3) Hash check refers to transforming an arbitrary length of input into a very short fixed length output, through the hash algorithm. The output is the hash value, also known as Hash code. Take SHA-1 and MD5, the two common Hash algorithms, as an example, they can calculate any type of file, hard disk partition or the entire hard disk to output respectively 128 and 160-bit fixed length hash value. We can check whether the file or the hard drive has been tampered at any time in the case, simply by comparing the Hash values of the same file, hard disk partition or the entire hard disk.

In the same file, hard disk partition or hard disk, even a single change of the punctuation mark will result in different hash value. That is, the Hash check ratio can be used to preserve electronic data evidence. As long as the Hash value is unchanged, it is able to prove that the electronic data evidence submitted to the court has not been changed, which is the significance of Hash verification. This can effectively realize the process control and quality supervision of the identification.

6. Electronic Data Show the Characteristics of the Whole Process of Quality Management and Process Control

(1) The technology basis of electronic data determines the characteristics of electronic data, which makes it different from the traditional evidence. It can be accurately reproduced at any time, without arousing any disputes.

(2) Electronic data is the information existing in a variety of storage media and network data flow. These information is generally mass data, with multi-dimensional characteristics like time, space, events, and the relationship between people, the motivations and consequences. It can be both qualitative and quantitative.

(3) Electronic data evidence is binary information, which can be stored for a long time, and reproduced at any time. Once completely fixed and properly preserved, the contents of the data will be an objectively guaranteed.

(4) Electronic data are easy to obtain and trace. For example, a car breaks down and needs to be

sent to the 4S store and get fixed. This is what traditional data recovery like. While in electronic data recovery mode, as long as we can find a mall fragment of this car, we can analyze the component of the steel and paint, getting to know the vehicle model, manufacturers and suppliers, so as to find the owner. Through the GPS of the owner, we can find the routing and the driving habit of this vehicle. Furthermore, through the owner's phone, we can analyze the related information flow, money flow and logistics, as well as the information about time, space, events, the relationship between people, the motivations and consequences.

7. Legal Scheme for Electronic Forensic Identification

In examining electronic data, we should pay attention to all aspects of the legal system. We should follow the legal requirements when investigating the computer-related crime and acquiring data. We should analyze related information, identify its type and characteristics, determine the equipment source, address source and the software or operating sources. Through the study of the objectivity, relevance, legitimacy and other properties and related links of the electronic data, we could find out the objective connection with the fact of the case. Then this electronic data becomes the valid evidence to prove the case, and the final expert opinion is formed. The whole process is repeatable.

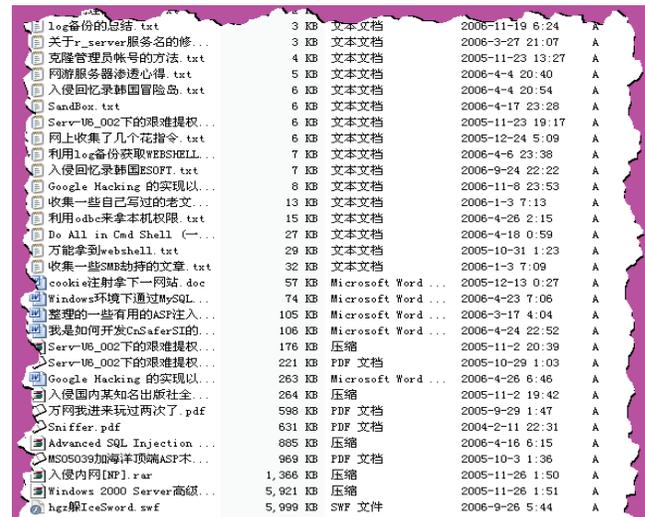
Take the Panda case as an example, its legal scheme is produced according to Article 286 of the Criminal Law: "Those who intentionally produce, disseminate computer viruses and other destructive programs, and affect the normal operation of the computer system with serious consequences will be punished in accordance with Paragraph 1."

7.1 The identification of "production" of the virus

Using hard disk copy machine, we copied the data from the original hard disk to a new hard disk without any data, and found in the Code Source directory a large number of source code files of virus and Trojan programs written in VB, VC and Delphi, which covered almost all the aspects of the network attack viruses and Trojans. Graph 2 is the screenshot of the hacker method in terms of "production" of the virus.

In the "\\Source Code\Delphi\My_Work\chuangran" directory, we found a number of versions of the virus source code file. According to the time sequence, the code content was basically the same, and the function was gradually improved, which

reflected the basic track of the author's maintenance and improvement process (see Appendix 1:xx judicial identification: [2007] 002).



Graph 2 Screenshot of the hacker method in terms of "production" of the virus

7.2 The identification of "dissemination" of the virus

In "***'s file", we found a large number of IP addresses, computer names, as well as user names and passwords for online games (such as "Hangame", "Itembay", "Zhengtuo (Warpath)", "Maple Story"). Combining with the related information found in the "readme.txt" (which appeared multiple times) under the "\\Source Code\Delphi\My_Work\chuangran" directory, we concluded that the ultimate goal of the producer of the Trojan virus "whboy" (i.e. the Panda virus) was to obtain economic benefits through the sale of "the Trojans they designed and the information obtained by the Trojans. In addition, from the chat retrieved from the hard disk we could see that there were a lot of people who knew what the virus producer was doing, and they demanded for the virus. Therefore, the writer of the "whboy" was not writing this Trojan program simply out of interest (See Appendix 1:xx judicial identification: [2007] 002) .

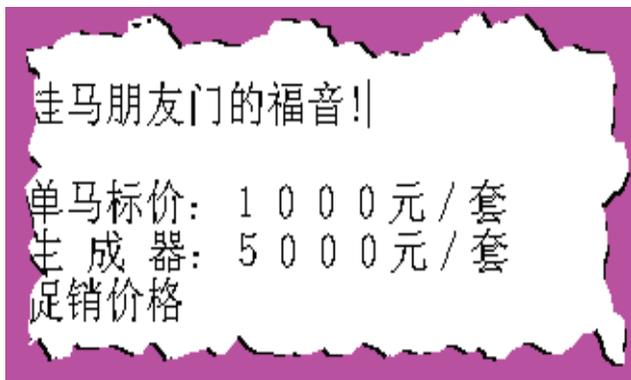
7.3 The identification of "intention"

At the early stage, the virus producer gave out the virus to the Internet users, and then together with other defendants, he rented a server with 1600 yuan to set up a website, and enabled the affected computers to visit this website automatic ally. Then they could sell the site traffic, and implanted in the web server the Trojan program, which could steal

the online game account and password by steps such as automatic detection and electronic envelope. Then the other defendants sold the information elsewhere. (See Appendix 2 The Indictment by People's Procuratorate (NO [2007]372); Appendix 4 The Criminal Judgment by People's Court (No [2007]350)). This series of behavior has constituted the main body of subjective "intention" in the production and dissemination of the virus.

7.4 The identification of "consequence"

Affected by the "whboy" Trojan, the running speed of the computer dropped, with blue screen and frequent restart of the system, and the hard disk data file was damaged (See Appendix 2 The Indictment by People's Procuratorate (NO [2007]372); Appendix 3 The Public Prosecution Opinion by People's Procuratorate (NO [2007]372); Appendix 4 The Criminal Judgment by People's Court (No [2007]350)). Meanwhile, the computer will become the "chicken" controlled by the Trojan writer, and would download files from specified website, which caused the failure of the computer system. Under "MyHacker\articles frequently read\bill", we found the billing information from January 2005 to July 2006, a total amount of about 400,000 yuan. Graph 3 shows the sales ads.



Graph 3 Sales ads

The behavior of the defendants is in full compliance with the constitutive elements of the crime of destroying computer information system. The identification of the four aspects: production, dissemination, intention and the consequences conform strictly to the relevant content of the criminal law, and the expert opinion has been admitted by the court: "Defendants Li and Lei intentionally produced computer virus; Defendants Li, Wang, and Zhang intentionally disseminated the computer virus which affected the normal operation of many computer systems with serious

consequences. Their behavior has constituted the crime of destroying computer information system, thus should bear criminal responsibility." (See Appendix 4 The Criminal Judgment by People's Court (No [2007]350).

8. Developing of the Technical Scheme

Developing of the technical scheme of the forensic identification needs to reflect its systematicness and depth. Systematicness is based on the technology of read only, cloning and verification, and refers to the overall technical scheme which aims to obtain data nondestructively, analyze the integrity of evidence, and present reproducible expert opinion.

"Depth" refers to the development of a more detailed technical scheme in preparation, investigation, collection, analysis, fixing, and presentation of evidence. For example, whether we should shut down the device; whether it should be turned off normally or cut off the electricity during the inquest; when we could remove the hard disk, whether we need an adapter card and when to use the tools to obtain image etc.

As the core part of digital forensics, the analysis and identification of electronic data consists of the following steps:

- (1) Get to know the composition of the case and the relationships
- (2) Note the motives and means of the case
- (3) Differentiate the investigative priorities of the suspects
- (4) Look for hidden digital evidence
- (5) Confirm the other evidences
- (6) Find the clues
- (8) Note the requirements imposed on the evidence when the case is submitted to the court.
- (8) Predict the behavior of a crime and evaluate the potential of its action

9. Developing of the Forensic Identification Scheme I

Indeed, when developing the forensic identification scheme, mostly we would integrate the legal scheme with the technical scheme, and make detailed identification plan based on the actual case, so that the identification can be conducted purposefully and step by step. We can analyze comprehensively the extracted electronic data, and determine the mutual relationship between motive,

criminal act, interaction and the time arrangement of the suspects. Electronic data collected from different computers can be used to infer when, where, why, in what kind of way and what the suspects have done.

9.1 Spatial analysis

Due to the nature of the Internet, electronic data can be found not only in personal computers, such as directory files, chatting records, web browsing history, and log files, but also in related server logs, network equipment and network traffic.

Among the overall crime act, it's hard to determine the specific activities of the criminal based on the hard disk-centered identification, because there are many crime scenes with different degree of involvement of each criminal. Therefore, it is necessary to apply fusion reasoning in analyzing the relevant electronic data.

9.2 Functional analysis

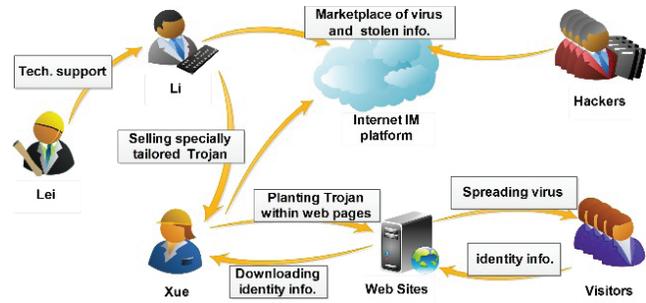
Functional analysis is to reveal the process the crime, for example, the research on the attempt to cover up the crime will be enlightening and will hint at the possible direction of data analysis. Functional analysis can help us understand the role of certain evidence, and the intent and motive of the criminals. Therefore, it could help appraisers to evaluate the reliability and implication of the e-evidence.

9.3 Temporal analysis

Temporal analysis is to determine the evidence of the development of the crime within a period of time. It helps to identify the sequence of time and the real-time pattern of events. The operating system saves the time when the files and folders are created, the last time when the files are modified and accessed. In addition, some application software will embed the temporal information in the files, logs and database, so as to display the time of various activities on the computer. These timestamp are useful for inferring the order of events.

9.4 Correlation analysis

Correlation analysis is used to determine the composition of crime, the location and mutual relationships of the criminals. It helps to create an inference graph of person-to-person, and person-to-computer relationship. The establishment of such a correlation graph relies on the discovery of the appraisers. Therefore, the correlation analysis of the graph works the best when there are limited entities. With the increase of the entities and links, we need some analytical tools to provide a graphical interface, shown in Graph 4.



Graph 4 Correlation graph

9.5 Structural analysis and granularity analysis

Based on the structure and granularity of the evidence, generally speaking, the larger the structure and granularity is, the more simple the analysis will be, the smaller the structure and granularity is the more technology and equipment will be needed. For instance, in the identification of intellectual property cases, we can first compare the structure of the file catalog, and then compare the number, the name, the type and the property of the files between the suspect software the original software. Furthermore, we may compare the number, the name, the type and the property of the fields.

9.6 Data analysis and code analysis

We could scan the file types, compare the characteristics of various types of files, and classify them, so that we could get some clue to the case. We need to pay special attention to the files which are hidden or whose attributes are changed when stored. These files usually contain some key and sensitive information. For example, we should pay attention to the analysis of the system logs, registry and Internet access history, and other important documents.

Because of the successful handling of the Panda case, the writer of this paper was awarded Individual Award of Merit, Class two, and the laboratory staff was awarded Collective Award of Merit, Second Class.

10. Working Environment and Supervision Over the Chain of Evidence

Electronic data should be properly preserved for reorganization, testing or demonstration. So there are strict requirements on the working environment, which should meet both the legal and technical standards. For instance, the storage device of electronic data should be kept far from high magnetic field, heated, and humid environment, and the hardware and software tools should pass

the access evaluation and authentication by related national departments.

There should be complete supervision over the whole identification process. The handover, custody, unpacking, and disassembly of the media should be completed jointly by the judicial officers and the custodian. The authenticity and integrity of each step should be checked and recorded by photos and detailed written transcript, on which the involved personnel should sign their names.

11. Architecture of the Electronic Data Forensics

Through learning and drawing on domestic and foreign research achievements, and based on the research and reference of domestic and foreign laws and practices, the writer of this paper proposed the architecture of the electronic data forensics. See Table 1.

We can see from above that electronic data forensics is the unified construction of its legal basis, technical basis, the making and implementation of its legal and technical schemes.

12. Conclusion and Prediction

Table 1 Architecture of the electronic data forensics

Making of the legal scheme		
Making of the technical scheme		
Making of the forensic identification scheme		
Working environment	Case introduction	Supervision of the chain of evidence
	Identification requirements	
	Receiving and cloning of the material	
	Temporal analysis, spatial analysis, structural analysis, granularity analysis	
	Functional analysis, correlation analysis, data analysis, code analysis	
	Expert opinion	
	Appearance in court	
	Legal qualification of personnel and agency	
Technical foundation of digital forensics		
Legal foundation of digital forensics		

Generally speaking, the research on and development of digital forensics in and out of China is unbalanced, the criteria disunited. There is an urgent need to study digital forensics from the basic theory, structure model, and practical application to perfect its structure, and lay a theoretical foundation for the future standard setting and platform integration. This paper is a preliminary discussion based on this conclusion and prediction, which sets foot into an interdisciplinary, frontier and innovative research area.

References

- The Scientific Working Group on Digital Evidence (SWGDE), Digital Evidence: Standards and Principles, Proposed Standards for the Exchange of Digital Evidence. (1999). London: International Hi-Tech Crime and Forensics Conference.
- Dan Farmer, Wietse Venema. (2011). Forensic Discovery, Computer Forensics Analysis Class Handouts. Retrieved on August 6 from <http://www.porcupine.org/forensics/handouts.html>.
- Chris Prorise, Kevin Mandia. (2001). Incident Response: Investigating Computer Crime, New York: McGraw-Hill Companies.
- Technical Working Group for Electronic Crime Scene Investigation. (2001). Electronic Crime Scene Investigation: A guide for responders, Washington, DC: The U. S. Department of Justice (DOJ).
- Dennis McGrath, Vincent Berk, Shu-kai Chin, etc. (2001). A Road Map for Digital Forensic Research, New York: Digital Forensic Research Workshop (DFRWS).
- Sun Bo. (2004). Research on key aspects of computer forensic methods. Beijing: Chinese Academy of Sciences.
- Standing Committee of NPC. (2005). Decision of the Standing Committee of NPC on the Administration of Forensic Authentication. NPC. Criminal Procedure Law of the People's Republic of China.
- Marcus K. Rogers, James Goldman, Rick Mislán, Timothy Wedge, Steve Debrotá. (2006). Computer Forensics Field Triage Process Model, Las, Vegas: Conference Digital Forensics, Security and Law.
- Peter Sommer. (1998). Digital Footprints: Assessing Computer Evidence, London: Criminal Law

Review Special Edition. NPC. Criminal Law of the People's Republic of China.
Wang, Wenqi, Miao, Fengjun, Pan Lei, Zhang Shuqin. (2010). Research on the Integrity of Network Forensics.

Hu Donghui, Shi, Xinling, Fan, Yuqi, Wu, Xindong. (2014). Review of Network Forensics.
Xiong, Zhihai, Zhou, Guiping. (2012). The Application of Encase forensics in Digital Forensics.

Session 3



Perceptions of Police Integrity Among Taiwanese Police and Businessmen

Kuo, Shih-Ya (Connie), Assistant Professor, Department of Sociology
University of Macau

Chang, Kuang-Ming, Professor & Dean of Police Administration College
Central Police University, Taiwan

Abstract

Police corruption is widespread. A study that collected data across ninety-five countries reported that approximately thirty-one percent of people who had contacts with police paid bribes. Ironically, police who are entrusted to protect people are one of the most corrupt. Police corruption is extremely difficult to study in a direct manner. The current study examined corruption of Taiwanese police, adopting *Klockars'* scenarios with modification so to accommodate the Taiwan context. In addition, how Taiwanese businessmen perceived police integrity was observed as well, which enabled the present study to cross-examine police integrity between the two interest-conflicting groups and to increase the validity of the study. The findings and implications are discussed in the manuscript.

Nigerian Immigrants' Perception of the Police: An Exploratory Study of the Impact of Contact with Police

Hsiao-Ming Wang and Sanni Ibrahim

University of Houston Downtown

Abstract

As police administrators recognize the role of general perceptions of and attitudes toward police as a determinant of police performance, measuring citizens' perceptions of the quality of service rendered by police has being one of many focuses of criminal justice research. Although few citizens have regular contact with police officers in a given year, the interaction between citizens and police should have an impact on citizens' perception of the police. However, this issue seems not being evidently addressed by prior research, especially from ethnic minorities' perspectives. To shed some light on the impact of contact with police upon citizens' perceptions of the police, this article used multivariate analyses to examine an existing data set that consists of 439 Nigerian immigrants residing in Houston. It is found that Nigerian immigrants in Houston, generally, had a positive perception of the local police. Among those who had contact with the police in the past 12 months, better perception of police is associated with positive contact experiences, which the nature of the contact does not impact perception of the police. Policy implications of those findings are given in this study.

Keywords: Perception of Police, Contact with Police, Nigerian Immigrants

Introduction

As police administrators recognize the role of general perceptions of and attitudes toward police as a determinant of police performance (Beck, Boni, & Packer, 1999), measuring citizens' perceptions of the quality of service rendered by police has being one of many focuses of criminal justice research (Akhtar, Rafiq, Asif, Saeed, & Kashif, 2011). Prior research involved two main approaches to measure police service. The first approach simply measured service quality (Donnelly, Kerr, Rimmer, & Shiu, 2006; Reisig & Chandek, 2001; Webb, 1998), whereas the second approach centered on three types of justice: procedural, interactional, and distributive (Greenberg, 1987). Procedural justice refers to perceptions of fairness in the public's mind regarding police services (Lind & Tyler, 1988); interactional justice refers to the perceived quality of service in encounters between the police and the public (Bies, 2005); and distributive justice refers to the resulting orientation, that is, the outcome of any interaction between the police and individuals (Brockner & Seigel, 1996).

Analyzing the citizens' perceptions of the police helps to understand citizens' satisfaction with the police services (Kelly & Swindell, 2002). Although very few citizens have had regular contact with police officers in a given year, "public opinion is still regarded as a pivotal source of improvement in

the quality of services offered to the community" (Akhtar et al., 2011, p. 100; Langan, Greenfield, Smith, Durose, & Levin, 2001). This article used part of an existing data set (Ibrahim, 2016) to examine the relationship between citizens' perceptions of the police and contact with police. Hopefully, it will shed some light on the impact of contact with police upon citizens' perceptions of the police.

Literature Review

The study of the synergy between law enforcement agents and the public can be traced back to the 1970s (Davis, 2000). It is found that citizens' perception generally depend upon the type of outcome in their interactions with their local police (Reisig & Parks, 2000). Citizens who had contact with police as a result of crime they committed or of traffic stop violations expressed low approving positions toward the police (Dean, 1980). Given the social control functions of a police officer and the punishment aspects their duties carry; it is very common for individuals to avoid contact with police in general. Hence, citizens who have fewer encounters with the police, for whatever reason, are more satisfied than when they have numerous encounters with the police (Brandl, Frank, Worden, & Bynum, 1994). However, citizens who are treated with respect and fairness by police officers usually hold more positive attitudes (Skogan, 2005; Wells,

2007; Weitzer & Tuch, 2005). In addition, citizens expressed greater satisfaction in their encounters with police when their service expectations were met during their contact or when the police are called for help (Reisig & Parks, 2002). It is worth noting that the interaction between police officers and the public is confounded by race. Dean (1980) found that simply being African American did not affect one's perceptions of the police, yet being Black and having contact with the police together were correlated with a poorer evaluation of the police.

Race and Demographic Characteristics

Past studies on race-based attitudes towards police has been the focal concern. African Americans, the most commonly studied minority group, were found by a majority of studies to be less likely than Whites to display favorable attitudes toward the police (Brown & Benedict, 2002; Decker, 1981; Wu, 2009). Correia, Reisig, and Lovrich (1996) found that Whites are more likely to view the police favorably and positively when compared to other races. Huo and Tyler (2000) also found that Whites reported more positive attitudes and experiences when compared to Latinos and African Americans during different types of contact with police. Some researchers argued that minorities evaluated the police more negatively because they were treated more negatively by the police (Dean, 1980; Wu, 2009).

Studies of British perceptions of the police showed a similar pattern as that of Americans. Waddington and Braddock (1991) noticed that young White and Asian participants in their sample saw police as a trustworthy guardian, while young Black people more likely viewed police as bullies. In Webster's (2004) study on policing in British Asian communities, the author indicated that the perceptions of police among Asians based on contact with the police, either as victims or witnesses, tends to fall between Blacks and Whites or is similar to Whites. Generally, Blacks are more hostile to the police than Whites and Asians (Webster, 2004).

On top of the factor of race/ethnicity, demographic characteristics such as age, gender and education have been found to be important correlates of public attitudes toward police. Age tends to be a strong predictor of attitudes toward police, with young people holding more unfavorable views than older people (Brown & Benedict, 2002). Older people are less likely than younger people to express negative attitudes toward law enforcement agents (Brown & Benedict, 2002; Nofziger & Williams, 2005; Weitzer, 2000; Wu, Sun, & Triplett, 2009). It is interesting to note that such findings remain, even

when other neighborhood and demographic factors were controlled for (Wu et al., 2009).

With respect to the effects of gender on public perceptions of police, less consistent results have been found (Brown & Benedict, 2002). Some studies have found women to be more supportive than men in their perceptions of police (Reisig & Giacomazzi, 1998; Sampson & Jeglum-Bartusch, 1998), whereas others have found the opposite (Correia et al., 1996; Hurst & Frank, 2000). Still another has found gender to be unrelated to satisfaction with police (Wu et al., 2009).

While Cao, Frank, and Cullen (1996) found no relationship between perceptions and education, most prior studies showed that education is inversely related to perceptions of the police (e.g., Worrall, 1999). Huebner, Schafer, and Bynum (2004) discovered that African Americans who attained higher education levels have low levels of support for police. In another study which compared the attitudes of college students to those who are not in college, Williams and Nofziger (2003) discovered that respondents who were not in college were more satisfied with the police. Weitzer & Tuch (2005) argued that people with higher education may be biased in their opinion of police conduct which leads to more negative perceptions of the police.

Victimization

Prior research indicated that victims of crime tend to have less positive opinions of the police than non-victims (Brown & Benedict, 2002; Geistman & Smith, 2007; Hurst & Frank, 2000; Payne & Gainey, 2007; Priest & Carter, 1999). Dowler and Sparks (2008) pointed out that the attitudes and opinions of crime victims toward police are affected by the quality of their contact with police. This means a courteous and quick response time on the part of the responding officer will lead to more positive opinions of the police (Priest & Carter, 1999; Tewksbury & West, 2001).

Methodology

This study used an existing data set collected in 2015, in which 452 Nigerian immigrants residing in Houston were surveyed by using the method of snowball sampling due to the fact that a sampling frame of target population was unavailable. Thirteen surveys were removed from the sample due to the issue of missing data, making the final sample size 439 (N = 439). The data come from a questionnaire of 70 questions. The present study used only 15 items related to the research purpose (see Table 1). The

concept “Nigerian immigrants” was operationally defined as “people who migrated from Nigeria to the United States and who have lived in Houston for the past 12 months” (Ibrahim, 2016, p. 19). For the concern of human protection, only Nigerian immigrants over 18 years old were surveyed (Ibrahim, 2016).

Variables and Measurements

Table 1 presents variables that are used in this study. The overall perception of the local police is the dependent variable (Y). Seven Likert-scale questions were used to measure this concept, including:

- 1.1 Police officers are courteous.
- 1.2 Police officers are honest.
- 1.3 Police officers are respectful toward people like me.
- 1.4 Police officers are hard-working.
- 1.5 Police officers are fair.
- 1.6 Police officers are well trained.
- 1.7 Police officers communicate very well.

The response of each question ranges from 1 to 5 (5 = Strongly Agree; 4 = Agree; 3 = Neither Agree nor Disagree; 2 = Disagree; 1 = Strongly Disagree), which result in an index from 7 to 35. The higher the score is, the more positive perceptions of police performance.

There are three independent variables in this study. Contact (X1), Contact Index (X2), and Stop (X3) measure the concept of contact with police. Contact (X1) uses the question “Have you any contact with the police in the past 12 months?” and is a binary variable (0 = No, 1 = Yes). Contact Index (X2) and Stop (X3) involve respondents who had contact with the police in the past 12 months only. Stop (X3) uses the question “What was the nature of the most recent contact?” and is a binary variable (Respondents involved traffic stop or being questioned by the police are coded 1, whereas citizen-initiated contact such as calls for police service are coded 0). Contact Index (X2) is a composite variable which includes three Likert-scale items as below:

TABLE 1: Variables and Measures (N = 439)

Concept	Variable (Survey Item #)	Level of Measurement
Dependent Variable		
Perceptions of Police	Y Perception Index (1.1-1.7)	Interval (7-35)
Independent Variables		
Contact with Police	X1 Contact (3.1)	0 = No 1 = Yes
	X2 Contact Index (3.3-3.5)	Interval (3-15)
	X3 Stop (3.6)	0 = No 1 = Yes
Control Variables		
Victimization	X4 Victimization (5.5)	0 = No 1 = Yes
Gender	X5 Male (6.1)	0 = No 1 = Yes
Age	X6 Age (6.2)	Ratio in year
Education	X7 Graduate Degree (6.3)	0 = No 1 = Yes

3.3 During contact I feel the police officer was respectful.

3.4 During contact I feel the police officer was professional.

3.5 During contact I feel the police officer was attentive.

The response of each question ranges from 1 to 5 (5 = Strongly Agree; 4 = Agree; 3 = Neither Agree nor Disagree; 2 = Disagree; 1 = Strongly Disagree), which result in an index from 3 to 15. The higher the score is, the more positive contact with the police.

Four variables are controlled in this study include victimization, male, age, and graduate degree. Victimization (X4) uses the question “Have you ever been a crime victim in the area where you live during the last 12 months?” and it is dummy coded (0 = No, 1 = Yes). Male (X5) is a binary variable (0 = No, 1 = Yes). Age (X6) is a continuous variable in years. Graduate degree (X7) is a binary variable (0 = No, 1 = Yes).

Data Analysis

Building on the literature regarding citizens’ perceptions of the police, this study used the analytical method linear regression to test following research hypotheses:

H1: Nigerian immigrants in Houston who have no contacts with police are more likely to have a better perception of local police.

H2: Nigerian immigrants in Houston who have more positive contacts with police are more likely to have a better perception of local police.

H3: Nigerian immigrants in Houston who have not been stopped by the police are more likely to have a better perception of local police.

Findings

Sample Characteristics

This study consists of three demographic variables, including gender, age and education. Gender is a binary variable with two attributes: male and female. In this study, there were 225 (51%) males and 214 (49%) females. Age is a continuous variable in actual years. The youngest respondent is 18, while the oldest respondent is 75. The average age of the sample in this study is about 41.5 years old. Education is a binary variable with two attributes: graduate degree (i.e., Ph.D., master, and professional degrees) and college degree and below. In this study, 250 (57%) Nigerian immigrants had earned a graduate degree and 189 (43%) Nigerians hold a college degree and below.

Perception of Police

Table 2 shows Nigerian immigrants' perceptions of the police in Houston. In general, Nigerian immigrants perceived police officers as courteous ($\bar{x} = 4.21$), well trained ($\bar{x} = 4.25$), and communicating well ($\bar{x} = 4.20$).

Table 2. Perception of Police (N=439)

	Min	Max	Mean	Std. Deviation
1.1 Police officers are courteous	1	5	4.21	1.072
1.2 Police officers are honest	1	5	3.94	1.254
1.3 Police officers are respectful towards people like me	1	5	4.08	1.210
1.4 Police officers are hardworking	1	5	4.14	1.153
1.5 Police officers are fair	1	5	4.02	1.177

1.6 Police officers are well trained	1	5	4.25	1.013
1.7 Police officers communicate very well	1	5	4.20	1.117

Contact with Police

Of the 439 surveyed, 167 (38%) respondents had contact with the police within the last 12 months. Among those 167 respondents who had contact with the police within the last 12 months, most of them (70%) involved a traffic stop or being questioned by the police. As Table 3 shows, respondents who had contact with the police within the last 12 months felt police somewhat attentive ($\bar{x} = 3.54$) while moderately satisfied with how they were treated by the police ($\bar{x} = 2.93$).

Table 3. Contact with Police (N=167)

	Min	Max	Mean	Std. Deviation
3.3 During contact I feel the police officer was respectful.	1	5	2.93	1.495
3.4 During contact I feel the police was professional.	1	5	3.26	1.349
3.5 During contact I feel the police officer was attentive.	1	5	3.54	1.269

Victimization

Among the 439 surveyed, 46 respondents (10.5%) had been victimized during the last 12 months. In other words, most Nigerian immigrants (89.5%) experienced no crime victimization during the past year.

Linear Regression: Full Model (N = 439)

Table 4 presents the linear regression model of all respondents in this study (N = 439). Linear regression uses the least-squares method to estimate the parameters in the population from which the sample was drawn and is suitable for continuous dependent variables (Bachman & Paternoster, 1997). In this model, the determinant coefficient (R^2) indicated that

about 5% of the variation of the perception of police was explained by the five independent variables. The *F*-test (4.42; d.f. = 5) implied that this model was significant at critical level 0.01.

Table 4. Regression of Full Model (N = 439)

Variable	b	Beta	t	VIF
X1 Contact with Police	1.77	0.13	2.75**	1.04
X4 Victimization	2.73	0.13	2.65**	1.08
X5 Male	-0.80	-0.06	-1.30	1.01
X6 Age	-0.05	-0.10	-2.07*	1.09
X7 Graduate Degree	0.70	0.05	1.08	1.10
Constant	30.63		23.41	

Notes: Adjusted R Square = 0.04**; d.f. = 5; * $\alpha \leq .05$, ** $\alpha \leq .01$

The *t* test showed that in this model three independent variables' partial slope coefficients (*b*) were significant. Specifically, contact with police and victimization were significant at level 0.01, while age was significant at level 0.05. The partial slope coefficient indicated the linear relationship between the perception of police and each independent variable. The partial slope coefficient of age (-0.05), for example, suggested that the increase of age by one year will lead to the decrease of 0.05 in the perception index while holding the other independent variables constant. The standardized partial slope coefficients (noted as Beta) offer a comparison of the relative contribution of each independent variable to the variance of the dependent variable. The stronger the relationship between the independent and dependent variable, the larger the Beta. In this model, contact with police (0.13) and victimization (0.13) both had the largest contribution to the variance of perception of police. Moreover, Benson and Walker (1988) noted their concern of multicollinearity in linear regression. To remedy this problem, they suggested the use of the variance inflation factor (VIF) as a measurement of multicollinearity. If the VIF of a variable is large (i.e., > 10), it is most likely linearly related to the other independent variables. In this situation, variable deletion must be taken into consideration (Hair et al., 1995:127). In this model, the largest VIF is 1.09. This outcome suggests that none of the partial slope coefficients were adversely affected by multicollinearity.

Linear Regression: Contact Model (N = 167)

Table 5 presents the regression model of respondents who had contact with the police within the last 12 months (N = 167). In this model, the determinant coefficient (R^2) indicated that about 10% of the variation of the perception of police was explained by the five independent variables. The *F*-test (3.46; d.f. = 5) implied that this model was significant at critical level 0.01. The *t* test showed that three independent variables' partial slope coefficient (*b*) were significant in this model. Specifically, victimization and age were significant at level 0.01, while contact index was significant at level 0.05. The partial slope coefficient of contact index (0.29), for example, suggested that the increase of contact index by one will lead to the increase of 0.29 in the perception index while holding the other independent variables constant. The standardized partial slope coefficients (noted as Beta) show that age (-0.27) had the largest contribution to the variance of perception of police, followed by victimization (0.25). The largest VIF in this model is 1.33, which suggests that none of the partial slope coefficients were adversely affected by multicollinearity.

Table 5. Regression of Contact Model (N = 167)

Variable	b	Beta	t	VIF
X2 Contact Index	0.29	0.17	2.16*	1.04
X4 Victimization	4.22	0.25	2.92**	1.33
X5 Male	-0.48	-0.04	-0.48	1.10
X6 Age	-0.10	-0.27	-2.81**	1.16
X7 Graduate Degree	1.48	0.12	1.31	1.36
Constant	30.63		23.41	

Notes: Adjusted R Square = 0.07**; d.f. = 5; * $\alpha \leq .05$, ** $\alpha \leq .01$

Linear Regression: Stop Model (N = 167)

Table 6 presents the regression model of respondents who had contact with the police within the last 12 months due to a traffic stop or being questioned by the police (N = 167). In this model, the determinant coefficient (R^2) indicated that about 8% of the variation of the perception of police was explained by the five independent variables. The *F*-test (2.61; d.f. = 5) implied that this model was significant at critical level 0.05. The *t* test showed that victimization was significant at

level 0.05, while age was significant at level 0.01. The standardized partial slope coefficients (noted as Beta) show that age (- 0.22) had the largest contribution to the variance of perception of police, followed by victimization (0.21). The largest VIF in this model is 1.34, which suggests that none of the partial slope coefficients were adversely affected by multicollinearity.

Table 6. Regression of Stop Model (N = 167)

Variable	b	Beta	t	VIF
X3 Stop	1.00	0.06	0.83	1.03
X4 Victimization	3.61	0.21	2.51*	1.30
X5 Male	- 0.55	- 0.04	- 0.55	1.11
X6 Age	- 0.10	- 0.22	- 2.69**	1.17
X7 Graduate Degree	1.11	0.09	0.98	1.34
Constant	33.01		14.58	

Notes: Adjusted R Square = 0.05*; d.f. = 5; * $\alpha \leq .05$, ** $\alpha \leq .01$

Discussion and Conclusions

There is always a concern of sample bias when non-probability sampling is used. The data set used by this study employed snowball sampling, a non-probability sampling method; hence, a discussion of sampling validity is necessary. The sample of this data set consists of 51% of males and 49% of females. This distribution basically reflects that of Black population in the United States (48% males and 52% females) ("Black Population," n.d.). The average age of the samples is 41.5 years old. Compared to available national data, the samples' average age is compatible with Whites (41) but is higher than that of Blacks (32), Asians

(31.6) and Latinos (27) (Wiltz, n.d.). The most unusual variable is the high level of education. According to census data conducted by Rice University and commissioned by the Chronicle, 58% of Nigerian immigrants had college degree and above (Aziz, 2012). In this study, 96% of respondents had a college degree and above. This positive skew is perhaps caused by the use of snowball sampling.

The hypotheses of this study were partially confirmed. The full model showed that Nigerian immigrants in Houston who have had contact with the police are more likely to have a better overall perception of local police. The contact model confirmed that Nigerian immigrants in Houston who

have more positive contacts with police are more likely to have better perception of local police. The stop model indicated no statistically significant difference between respondents who were stopped or questioned by the police and citizen-initiated contact in terms of overall perception of local police. In other words, only the second research hypothesis of this study has been confirmed by multivariate analyses. Specifically, respondents who have more positive contact with police tend to have a better perception of local police. The univariate analysis also showed that Nigerian immigrants in Houston felt that police were somewhat attentive and they were being moderately respected by the police. Those findings seem consistent with prior studies that citizens who are treated with respect and fairness by police officers usually hold more positive attitudes (Skogan, 2005; Wells, 2007; Weitzer & Tuch, 2005).

It is worth mention that victimization and age, two control variables in this study, were statistically significant to the dependent variable in all three regression models. Age is inversely related to the overall perception of local police. Younger respondents tend to have a more negative perception of police. This finding seems consistent with prior studies (Brown & Benedict, 2002; Nofziger & Williams, 2005; Weitzer, 2000; Wu et al. 2009). Unlike prior studies, this study found that people who had been victimized tend to have to have a better perception of police. Why do crime victims have a better perception of the police? Prior research suggested that the crime victims' opinions towards police are affected by the quality of their contact with police (Dowler & Sparks, 2008). Are crime victims' positive opinions to the police in this study caused by police officers' courteous and quick response time as suggested by prior studies (Priest & Carter, 1999; Tewksbury & West, 2001)? This question cannot be answered by the present study and further research is needed.

Furthermore, the subjects of this study are Nigerian Americans, a racial/ethnic minority group originally from Africa with different cultural backgrounds and had not been studied in prior research yet (Ibrahim, 2016). In the era of community policing, as Dunham and Alpert (2010) pointed out, residents with different cultural backgrounds have different values concerning the appropriateness of police practices. The findings of this study may help law enforcement agencies to expand their understandings of Nigerian Americans and, in return, provide better service to this group of constituents in the context of community policing.

In sum, this study found that people who had contact with the police tend to have a better

perception of the police. Among those citizens who had contact with the police, officers' professionalism and attention and respect toward the citizen lead to a better perception of the police. Nevertheless, the nature of contact has no influence over the perception of the police. This finding suggests that police administrators should continue officers' training in professionalism and forge the culture of showing respect and attention to citizens.

References

- Akhtar, A., Rafiq, S., Asif, A., Saeed, A., & Kashif, M. (2011). Public perceptions of police service quality: empirical evidence from Pakistan. *International Journal of Police Science and Management, 14*(2), 97-106.
- Aziz, N. (2012). *Survey: Nigerians most educated in the U.S.* Retrieved from: <http://www.Bet.com/news/national/2012/03/20/Survey-nigerians-most-educated-in-the-u-s.html>.
- Bachman, R., & Paternoster, R. (1997). *Statistical Methods for Criminology and Criminal Justice*. New York: McGraw-Hill.
- Beck, K., Boni, N., & Packer, J. (1999). The use of public attitude surveys: what can they tell police managers? *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management, 22*, 191-213.
- Bies, R. J. (2005). Are procedural justice and interactional justice conceptually distinct? In J. Greenberg, and J. Colquitt (Eds.), *Handbook of organizational justice* (pp. 85-112). Mahwah, NJ: Erlbaum.
- Black Population (n.d.). Retrieved from <http://backdemographics.com/black-male-statistics/>
- Brandl, S., Frank, J., Worden, R., & Bynum, T. (1994). Global and specific attitudes toward the police: Disentangling the relationship. *Justice Quarterly, 11*, 119-134
- Brocknerv, J., & Siegel, P. (1996). Understanding the interaction between procedural and distributive justice: The role of trust. In R. M. Kramer and T. R. Tyler (Eds.), *Trust in organizations: Frontiers of theory and research* (pp. 390-423). Beverly Hills, CA: Sage.
- Brown, B., & Benedict, W. (2002). Perceptions of the police: Past findings, methodological issues, conceptual issues and policy implications. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management, 25*, 543-580.
- Cao, L., Frank, J., & Cullen, F. (1996). Race, community context and confidence in the police. *American Journal of Police, 15*, 3-22.
- Correia, M.E., Reisig, M.D., & Lovrich, N.P. (1996). Public perceptions of state police: An Analysis of individual-level and contextual variables. *Journal of Criminal Justice, 24*, 17-28.
- Davis, R. (2000). *The use of citizen surveys as a tool for police reform*. New York: Vera Institute Of Justice.
- Dean, D. (1980). Citizen attitudes toward the police. *Journal of Police Science and Policy Quarterly, 2*, 445-471.
- Decker, S. (1981). Citizen attitudes toward the police. *Journal of Police Science and Administration, 9*, 80-87.
- Donnelly, M., Kerr, N. J., Rimmer, R., & Shiu, E. M. (2006). Assessing the quality of police services using SERVQUAL. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies and Management, 29*, 92-105.
- Dowler, K., & Sparks, R. (2008). Victimization, contact with police, and neighborhood conditions: Reconsidering African American and Hispanic attitudes toward the police. *Police Practice & Research, 9*, 395-415.
- Dunham, R.G., & Alpert, G.P. (2010). *Critical issues in policing: contemporary readings* (6th ed.). Long Grove, IL: Waveland Press.
- Geistman, J., & Smith, B. W. (2007). Juvenile attitudes toward police: A national study. *Journal of Crime & Justice, 30*, 27-51.
- Greenberg, J. (1987). A taxonomy of organizational justice theories. *Academy of Management Review, 12*, 9-22.
- Hair, Joseph F., Rolph E. Anderson, Ronald L. Tatham, & William C. Black (1995). *Multivariate Data Analysis*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.
- Huebner, B. M., Schafer, J. A., & Bynum, T. S. (2004). African American and White perceptions of police services: Within- and between-group variation. *Journal of Criminal Justice, 32*(2), 123-135
- Huo, Y.J., & Tyler, T.R. (2000). *How different ethnic groups react to legal authority*. San Francisco: The Public Policy Institution of California.
- Hurst, Y., & Frank, J. (2000). How kids view cops: The nature of juvenile attitudes toward the police. *Journal of Criminal justice, 28*, 189-203.

- Ibrahim, S. (2016). *Nigerian immigrants' perception of the police in Houston, Texas* (Unpublished master thesis). University of Houston-Downtown, Texas
- Kelly, J. M., & Swindell, D. (2002). A multiple-indicator approach to municipal service evaluation: correlating performance measurement and citizen satisfaction across jurisdictions. *Public Administration Review*, 62, 610-621.
- Langan, P., Greenfeld, L., Smith, S., Durose, M., & Levin, D. (2001). *Contacts between Police and the public: Findings From the 1999 national survey*. Washington, DC: Bureau of Justice Statistics.
- Lind, E. A., & Tyler, T. R. (1988). *The social psychology of procedural justice*. New York: Plenum Press.
- Nofziger, S., & Williams, L. S. (2005). Perceptions of police and safety in a small town. *Police Quarterly*, 8(2), 248-270.
- Payne, B. K., & Gainey, R. R. (2007). Attitudes about the police and neighborhood safety in disadvantaged neighborhood: The influence of criminal victimization and perceptions of a drug problem. *Criminal Justice Review*, 32(2), 142-155.
- Priest, T. B., & Carter, D. B. (1999). Evaluations of police performance in an African American sample. *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 27, 457-466.
- Reisig, M. D., & Chandek, M. (2001). The effects of expectancy disconfirmation on Outcome satisfaction in police-citizen encounters. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies, and Management*, 24, 88-99.
- Reisig, M.D., & Giacomazzi, A. (1998). Citizen perceptions of community policing: Are attitudes toward police important? *Policing*, 21, 547-561.
- Reisig, M. D., & Parks, R. B. (2000). Experience, quality of life, and neighborhood context: a hierarchical analysis of satisfaction with police. *Justice Quarterly*, 17, 607-630.
- Reisig, M.D., & Parks, R. (2002). *Satisfaction with police-What matters?* Washington, DC: National Institute of Justice.
- Sampson, R., & Jeglum-Bartusch, D. (1998). Legal cynicism and (subcultural?) tolerance of deviance: The neighborhood context of racial differences. *Law and Society Review*, 32, 77-804.
- Skogan W. (2005). Citizen satisfaction with police encounters. *Police Quarterly*, 8, 298-321.
- Tewksbury, R., & West, A. (2001). Crime victims' satisfaction with police services: An assessment in one urban community. *Justice Professional*, 14(4), 271-285.
- Waddington, P.A., & Braddock, Q. (1991). Guardians or bullies? Perceptions of the police amongst Black, White and Asian boys. *Policing and Society*, 2, pp. 31-45.
- Webb, D. A. (1998). Segmenting police customers on the basis of their service quality expectations. *Services Industries Journal*, 18(1), 72-100.
- Webster, C. (2004). Policing British Asian communities. In Burke, R.H. (Ed.), *Hard Cop, Soft Co: Dilemmas and Debate in Contemporary Policing* (pp.69-84). Portland, OR: Willan Publishing.
- Weitzer, R. (2000). Racializing policing: Residents' perceptions in three neighborhoods. *Law and Society Review*, 34(1), 129-155.
- Weitzer, R., & Tuch, S. A. (2005). Racially biased policing: Determinants of citizen perceptions. *Social Forces*, 83, 1009-1030.
- Wells, W. (2007). Type of contact and evaluations of police officers: the effects of Procedural justice across three types of police-citizen contacts. *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 35, 612-621.
- Williams, L. S., & Nofziger, S. (2003). Cops and college crowd: Young adults and perceptions of police in a college town. *Journal of Crime & Justice*, 26(2), 125-151
- Wiltz, T. (n.d.). *America's wire, expanding age gap between Whites and minorities*. Retrieved from: <http://americaswire.org/drupa17/?q=content/expanding-age-gap-between-whites-and-minorities>
- Worrall, J. L. (1999). Public perceptions of police efficacy and image: The "fuzziness" of support for the police. *American Journal of Criminal Justice*, 24, 47-66.
- Wu, Y. (2009). *Race and policing: Chinese immigrants'/Americans perceptions of the police* (Order No. 3360271, University of Delaware). Retrieved from ProQuest Dissertations and Theses (ProQuest ID: 304877456).
- Wu, Y., Sun, I., & Triplett, R. (2009). Race, class or neighborhood context: Which matters more in measuring satisfaction with police? *Justice Quarterly*, 26, 125-156.

The Effect of Micro-level Calls for Service on Public Attitudes Toward the Police

Fei Luo and Ling Ren

Sam Houston State University

Public attitudes toward the police (PATP) is a key research area in policing. Previous studies on the correlates of PATP tend to focus on perceptual factors, while objective factors have largely been overlooked. The purpose of this study was to perform a “reality check” by examining the effects of individual level calls for service on PATP. GIS techniques and Structural Equation Modeling were used for the analysis. The results show that the number of calls for service surrounding each resident did have an impact on PATP and the effects varied in neighborhoods with different levels of concentrated disadvantage.



The effect of micro-level calls for service on public attitudes toward the police

Fei Luo, PhD
Ling Ren, PhD
Sam Houston State University
Department of Criminal Justice and Criminology



Methods

- **Data**
 - Two waves of Houston Police Department (HPD) Citizen Contact/Impression Surveys
 - 1,250 in 2010 and 1,143 in 2012
 - X and Y coordinates allow the incorporation of geo-coded data and measurement at the individual level
- **Statistical analysis**
 - ArcGIS geocoding
 - Structural Equation Modeling (SEM)

3



Literature Review

- Previous literature has greatly enhanced our understanding of the nature and sources of public attitudes toward the police (PATP).
- However, two important issues regarding the measurement of PATP and nature of the determinants warrant further exploration
 - Regarding the measurement of PATP, the dimension of PATP measured in empirical literature is ambiguous
 - In terms of the determinants of PATP, previous studies tended to focus on perceptual factors, while objective factors have been under-studied (the number of calls for service)



Methods

- **Dependent variables:**
 - General attitudes toward the police (GATP)
 - Specific attitudes toward the police (SATP)

4



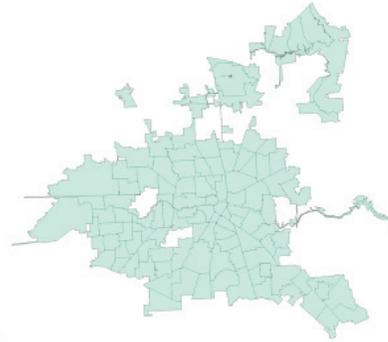
Methods

- **Explanatory variables:**
- Demographic model
 - Age
 - Gender
 - Race/Ethnicity
 - Education

5



Methods



8



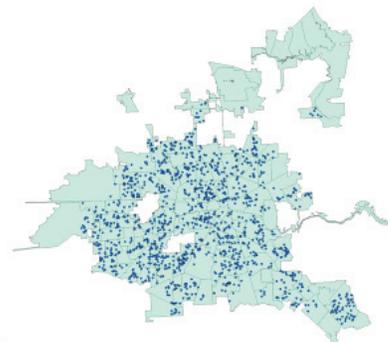
Methods

- **Explanatory variables:**
- Police – citizen interaction model
 - Contact: no contact, involuntary contact, and voluntary contact
 - Expectation fulfillment

6



Methods



9



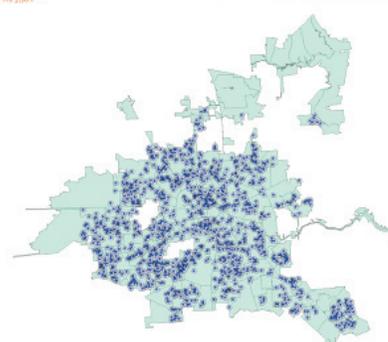
Methods

- **Explanatory variables:**
- Accountability model
 - Number of calls for service
 - Perception of disorder (scale of 4)
 - Fear of crime (scale of 2)
 - Victimization
 - Collective efficacy (scale of four)

7

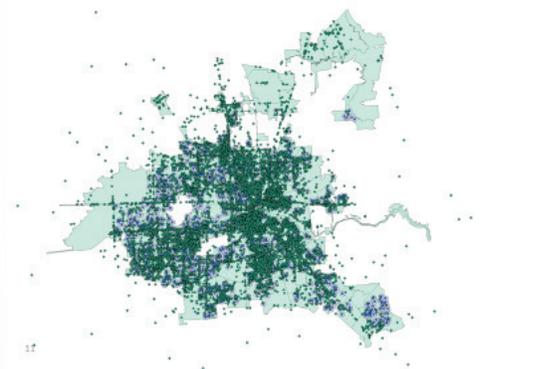


Methods



10

Methods



11

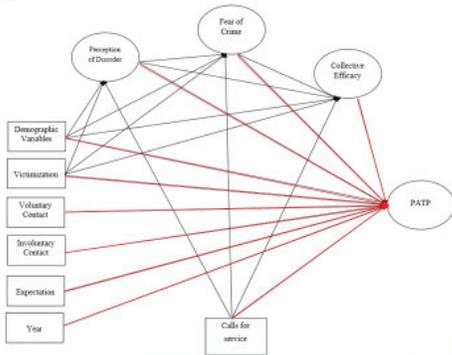
Findings and Discussion

Calls For Service-CFS

Variables	General Attitudes toward the Police				Specific Attitudes toward the Police			
	GATP	PD	Fear	CE	SATP	PD	Fear	CE
CFS	-.014	.109***	.041	-.114***	.057**	.108***	.041	-.115***
PD	.012	—	.377***	-.129***	-.08***	—	.376***	-.129***
Fear	-.035	—	—	-.248***	-.103***	—	—	-.248***
Victimization	-.1051**	.171***	.13***	-.065*	-.075***	.172***	.13***	-.065*
Vol contact	.012	—	—	—	-.023	—	—	—
Invol contact	.038	—	—	—	.01	—	—	—
Expectation	.488***	—	—	—	.456***	—	—	—
CE	.109***	—	—	—	.088**	—	—	—
Age	.005	-.019	.013	.045	-.036	-.019	.013	.045
Gender	-.014	.079***	.192***	.08***	.002	.079***	.192***	.08***
Race	-.182**	.024	.069*	-.169***	-.009	.024	.069*	-.17***
Hispanic	-.09***	.054	.008	-.148***	.026	.054	.007	-.148***
Education	-.045*	-.123***	-.081**	.085**	-.165***	-.123***	-.081**	.085**
Year	.02	—	—	—	-.002	—	—	—
R-squared	.450	.230	.253	.077	.384	.077	.253	.231
RMSEA	.037				.038			
CFI	.969				.958			
TLI	.961				.947			

Note: * $p < .05$, ** $p < .01$, *** $p < .001$. PD=Perception of disorder, Vol contact=voluntary contact, Invol contact= involuntary contact, CE=collective efficacy.

Research Model



12

Discussion

- The concept of PATP is not unitary but rather multidimensional in nature
- The importance of geographic location attached to the measurement of PATP should be highlighted in the relevant research.
- Regarding race effect, being Hispanic and Black only influenced GATP, not SATP, indicating that general support of minorities was given and was not related to the specific evaluations of police performance.
- It is also important to note that the number of calls for service was significantly related to SATP.

Findings and Discussion

Indicators	Exploratory Factor Analysis		Confirmatory Factor Analysis	
	1 Factor	2 Factors	1 Factor	2 Factors
GATP				
Courteous	.743	.803	.189	.799
Honest	.760	.742	.291	.782
Respectful	.771	.820	.212	.827
Fair	.771	.800	.237	.816
Communicate well	.745	.760	.246	.767
SATP				
Traffic law enforcement	.615	.319	.583	.598
Narcotics and drug enforcement	.656	.205	.788	.682
Responding to drug issues	.638	.197	.769	.660
Responding to prostitution	.588	.117	.741	.572
Response time to calls for service	.636	.365	.559	.605
Eigenvalue	4.80	3.42	2.70	
Explained variance	48.02	34.16	26.98	
χ^2			2827.165	499.734
Degree of freedom			35	34
CFI			.897	.983
TLI			.867	.977
RMSEA			.183	.076

Implications

- Police administrators should focus on public concerned issues at the neighborhood level to build up support from the public and limit their input of resources at promotion of department as a whole
- Since expectation fulfillment is correlated with positive evaluations of the police, more can be done to increase public expectation fulfillment
- More should be done to increase police visibility and accessibility, in order to promote citizens' perceptions of police effectiveness and confidence in the police

Exploring the Corruption Behaviors Among Correctional Officers in Taiwan: A Preliminary Study

Lai, Yung-Lien, PhD

Assistant Professor, Central Police University, Taiwan

Abstract

In November 2013, a significant bribery in prison has been exposed where 19 correctional officials, including two wardens and one deputy warden, are alleged to have received money in exchange for granting prisoners special visitor privileges and allowing their family members to smuggle contraband items into correctional facilities. This scandal event impacts the public confidence in Taiwan correctional system. While the study of corruption behavior has been prevalent in the Taiwan criminal justice literature, specifically in police and court systems, to the best of our knowledge, no research has been conducted exploring corruption behaviors among correctional officers in Taiwan. Using content analysis, this study collected 40 courts judgements with 58 individuals engaging in bribery and corruption lawsuits drawn from Taiwan Juridical Archival system during the period from 2000 to 2016. Results derived from descriptive statistics indicate that more than 95% of those individuals are male. About 90 % are frontline personnel, whereas 81 % are uniformed guards. Those convict officials reported that they violated authorities, regulations, and laws to receive illegal money and other valuable items (such as gold watches, antiques, boutiques, stocks, etc.) in exchange for granting some special offers and privileges to inmates, such as smuggling contraband items, giving more rewards, special visitors and visitations, luxury labor jobs, charging protection rackets and providing, cover ups, furlough, and forms of legitimate release (parole) etc. The most popular motivation of engaging in corruption is making a luxury life, followed by poverty, and human greedy. In addition, organizational conspiracy is a good way to bribe correctional officials: inmates corrupted officials through middlemen who are either former correctional officers (such as retired officers) or those persons are familiar with correctional system (such as journalists). Based on our findings, the theory of Fraud triangle which proposed by Cressey in 1953 has been verified that opportunity, motivation and rationalization are three main components appropriately explaining the etiology of correctional officers' corruption behaviors in Taiwan.

Key words: correctional officers, bribery, corruption, theory of Fraud triangle, prison

On the Identification and Prevention of Grueling Interrogation^{14*}

Ma Tingting

Associate Professor of Law, Faculty of Law, Guangdong Police College, China; PHD Candidate, Southwest University of Political Science and Law; Director, the Centre for Criminal Law Enforcement Studies of Legal Research Institute at Guangdong Police College, China; Researcher, the Centre for Public Safety Studies, Guangdong Province, China.

Abstract

Grueling interrogation is a kind of illegal behaviors of obtaining confession that makes suspects suffer from extensive questioning. Nowadays, the main countries with an adequate legal system are against grueling interrogation in their statutory codes or judicial precedents. According to foreign experience, it will be considered as grueling interrogation if (1) The subjects are investigators; (2) The objects of investigation are suspects or witnesses; (3) The interrogation lasts beyond 12 hours, or 6 hours of continuous rest time in every 24 hours is not guaranteed. And the same time, there should be some discretion standards to identify grueling interrogation. Accordingly, we can take a variety of measures to prevent grueling interrogation.

14 * The paper is the periodical result of 'On the Prevention and Control of Emergency Events of High-risk Groups of Floating Population under Public Security System' (National Social Science Fund Project 2014,14BJL134), and 'On the Startup System of Criminal Proceedings – Taking Case of Public Prosecution as an Example' (the Project of Innovation for Enhancing & Scientific Research Project of Guangdong Police College,2014S01).

The Supreme People's Court of the PRC issued the 'Opinions on Establishment and Perfection of the Working Mechanism of Prevention of Unjust, False and Erroneous Criminal Cases' (Opinions) in november 2013. It is provided in Article 8 of the Opinions that the confession of the defendant collected by illegal means such as extorting confessions by torture or freezing, starving, grilling and grueling interrogation shall be excluded. This provision illustrates the strongly negative attitude of our country to 'grueling interrogation'. In fact, the Criminal Procedure Law in our country denied the illegal interrogation long ago. At this time, the Supreme People's Court specially proposes the objection to 'grueling interrogation', because both grueling interrogation and extorting confessions by torture seriously infringe the basic human rights of suspects, and violate the basic requirements of substantial justice and procedural justice, and violate the basic principles of the procedural law, and reduce the credibility of the judicial organs, and increasingly erode the foundation for the operating of the Criminal Procedure Law. Besides, compared with extorting confessions by torture, the torment to the prosecuted brought by grueling interrogation is more concealed, and it is more difficult to collect the evidence to prove it. Therefore, the identification and prevention of grueling interrogation are the key points for the research, which take the identification as the premise and the prevention as the purpose. This paper will expound the above contents from

four aspects which include the connotation of grueling interrogation, the overseas experiences on identification and prevention of grueling interrogation, the criterions of identification, the prevention measures, to start the discussion which hopefully serves as a trigger for further research about this issue.

1. Connotation of Grueling Interrogation

Academic opinion is divided on the definition of grueling interrogation in our country. It is generally regarded by scholars that the extent of the illegality of grueling interrogation shall not less than that of extorting confessions by torture; with the difference that grueling interrogation is part of extorting confessions by torture or 'other illegal means'. Besides, the title 'torture' is adopted for the physical and mental torment in interrogation in 'the United Nations Convention against Torture' (Convention). In view of the above, there are different connotations for 'torture', 'extorting confessions by torture' and 'grueling interrogation':(1) It is provided in section 1 of the 'Convention' that 'torture' means '..... any act by which severe pain or suffering, whether physical or mental, is intentionally inflicted on a person.....'. Accordingly, 'torture' includes corporal punishment and mental torture. (2) China's Supreme People's Procuratorate defines extorting

confessions by torture as the behavior that makes the suspect suffer from serious physical or mental ache or pains by corporal punishment or disguised corporal punishment, for such purposes that obtain confessions. Therefore, the extorting confessions by torture means 'corporal punishment or disguised corporal punishment', its extension should be less than torture.¹⁵ (3)'Other illegal means' refer to the means which are used to force the suspect to make the required statement against his/her will with the same law violation degree and compelling degree to the suspect with extorting confessions by torture or threats. It lays the stress on 'against his/her will', which is focused on the mental compulsion, which just conforms to the characteristics of grueling interrogation. Therefore, as for the connotations of the three behaviors, the torture includes the extorting confessions by torture and the grueling interrogation, in which the extorting confessions by torture lays stress on the corporal punishment and the grueling interrogation lays stress on the mental torture. Grueling interrogation belongs to 'other illegal means'.

2. Overseas Experiences

According to the literatures analysis, the main countries with an adequate legal system affirmatively express their objection to grueling interrogation in their statutory codes or judicial precedents, and designate the boundaries for grueling interrogation in the principle or specific way. Besides, they adopt a series of measures to preventing the behavior, and finally form the four prevention models.

A. Discretion Model under the voluntary confession rule

The United States of America is the representative country for Discretion Model under the voluntary confession rule (Discretion Model). The identification of grueling interrogation in the United States of America mainly originated from the voluntary confession rule. The criteria for violation of 'voluntariness' was only limited to significant violent means in interrogation at first.¹⁶ Later, along with the reform on police department and the public's extreme aversion to physical violence, the violent interrogation in the United States of America gradually withdrew from the stage of history from 1910 to 1930s. However, the police turned to the applying of invisible violence to the suspect, and

grueling interrogation became stock-in-trade.¹⁷ Therefore, the identification of illegal interrogation gradually changed from the physical torment to 'more subtle forms of pressure'.¹⁸ The *Chambers* case in 1940 was the earliest example. In this case, the police did not use violence, but carried on the isolated interrogation to four suspects for one week. During this period, no opportunity for visit or legal aid was provided. It was finally recognized by The United States Supreme Court that the interrogation violated the voluntary principle, and the original decision was reversed.¹⁹ The most typical case taking the length of interrogations as the criteria of 'voluntariness' was the *Ashcraft* case in 1944. In this case, the police carried on continuous interrogation of 36 hours to Ashcraft, a suspect of murder case, without providing any opportunity for sleep or rest. It was finally determined by the Supreme Federal Court that 'based on the totality of the circumstances, petitioners' confessions were not voluntary but coerced and violated the *Fourteenth Amendment*'; therefore, the guilty verdict of the first trial and Tennessee' Supreme Court was reversed.²⁰ After that case, the length of interrogations became the key element for the determination of the 'voluntariness'.²¹ With the accumulation of cases, at present, when applying the voluntary confession rule, the judges in the United States of America often consider 'totality of the circumstances': besides taking the length of interrogations and conditions into consideration, they also take other factors such as the defendant's age, experience, education, background, language comprehension, anti-pressure ability, previous crime experience of the suspect, the behavior of the police, as well as the right notification is complete and sufficient or not, into account.²²

On the prevention of grueling interrogation, the right of lawyer-on-site during interrogation effectively prevents the occurrence of grueling interrogation. Besides, the overall video and audio

15 *Rules of Criminal Procedure of the People's Procuratorate*, article 65.

16 See *Brown v. Mississippi* (1936), 297 U.S. 278.

17 See Ma jinghua, 'On Extorting a Confession by Torture in America-- historical vicissitude and judicial control', (2013) 33 *Criminal Law Review*, at 492.

18 George C Thomas, 'The End of the Road for *Miranda v. Arizona*?: on the History and Future of Rules for Police Interrogation' (2000), 37 *Am. Crim. L. Rev.* 1.

19 See *Chambers v. Florida* (1940), 309 U.S. 227.

20 See *Ashcraft v. Tennessee* (1944), 322 U.S. 143.

21 See *Lisenba v. California* (1941), 314 U.S. 219 (42 hours); *Binns v. State* (1961), 233 Ark. 259, 344 S.W.2d 841 (57 hours).

22 See *Michael Rene Pardue. a/k/a 'Monkey' v. State* (1996), 695 So. 2d 199; *People v. Delisle* (1990), 455 N.W.2d 401; *People v. Humphrey* (2006), 132 P.3d 352.

recording system during interrogation is adopted by most states of the United States of America.²³ Once the evidence is determined by the court as obtained from grueling interrogation, both the confession and the ‘fruit of the poisonous tree’ will be excluded. In short, the United States of America does not forbid grueling interrogation in the Code, but takes it as one of factors in violation of the voluntary confession rule; it relies on the discretion of the judge according to totality of the circumstances to determine if exclude the evidence or not in different cases.

B. Identification by Precedents Model under Rule of Evidentiary Use Prohibition

Germany is the representative region of Identification by Precedents Model under Rule of Evidentiary Use Prohibition (Identification by Precedents Model). It is clearly proposed in paragraph 1 of section 136 a of Criminal Procedure Code of Germany to forbid grueling interrogation, and it is provided that ‘The person charged with a crime has the right to determine and confirm his/her will; it is forbidden to deprive him/her of fundamental rights by means of abuse, grueling strategy, physical violence, using drugs, torment, fraud or hypnosis , etc. And the enforcement can only be conducted within the bounds of the Criminal Procedure Code.’²⁴The definition of grueling interrogation is not provided in statutory codes, and the criteria for identification mainly exists in judicial precedents of the European Court of Human Rights and the Federal Supreme Court of Germany. Generally speaking, it is determined by a series of legal precedents by the Federal Supreme Court of Germany that: objective evaluation shall be adopted for the identification of grueling interrogation, no matter if the fatigue state is caused by the investigators on purpose or not, or if the investigators know the suspect is in fatigue state or not; but the other hand, if the suspect cannot sleep and is in ‘catnap’ state during time for recess, it cannot be determined as grueling interrogation;²⁵ night-time interrogation is not necessarily

- 23 See Gu Yongzhong,Zhang Jing, ‘ Investigation Report on American Criminal Interrogation System’, in:Fan Chongyi & Gu Peidong, Positive Research on Interrogation Procedure Reform:Lawyers-on-site Recording and Videoing at Interrogation Pilot, Chinese People’s Public Security University press , Mar.2007, at 480.
- 24 Adapted from Li Changke, Criminal Procedure Code of Germany, China University of Political Science and Law press, Apr.1995,at 62.
- 25 Clause Roxin (GER.), Criminal Procedure Law, Wu Liqi translating, Law Press, Jan.2003, at 234.

prohibited, and it will be identified as illegal interrogation only when the suspect is interrogated really in fatigue state.²⁶

On the rule of evidentiary use prohibition, both the evidence obtained from grueling interrogation and the ‘fruit of the poisonous tree’ are enforced to be excluded in Germany.²⁷ Besides, it is further provided in paragraph 3 of section 136 a of the Criminal Procedure Code that the confession obtained by illegal means do not have admissibility even with the consent of the defendant. Although the grueling interrogation is strictly prohibited by statutory codes or judicial precedents, But the actual situation is not optimistic for the time being:Since investigating system by judges ex officio is adopted for proof of illegal evidence and supporting protection mechanisms of exclusionary rule are not inadequate, when it is difficult to determine whether there is illegal interrogation or not, the courts in Germany often make a presumption in favor of the police; and the complaint that police use illegal interrogation methods may not lead to the exclusion of illegal evidence unless the prosecuted can provide strong evidence. Therefore, the parctical effect of section 136 of the Criminal Procedure Code of Germany is much more limited than it seems to be.²⁸

C. Comprehensive Regulations Model on Limiting the Length of Interrogations

the United Kingdom’s current legislation has made detailed regulations for the identification of grueling interrogation, which can be called as Comprehensive Regulations Model on Limiting the Length of Interrogations (Comprehensive Regulations Model). It is provided in section 12.2 of Police and Criminal Evidence Act 1984 (PACE) Codes of Practice (the Codes of Practice) that:

Except as below, in any period of 24 hours a detainee must be allowed a continuous period of at least 8 hours for rest, free from questioning, travel or any interruption in connection with the investigation concerned. This period should normally be at night or other appropriate time which takes account of when the detainee last slept or rested. If a detainee is arrested at a police station after going there

- 26 Jiang Nan, Standardization Practice; of Investigation and Interrogation , Chinese People’s Public Security University press , Apr. 2012, at 73.
- 27 See Zheng Xu, On the Rule of Excluding Illegal Evidence, China Legal Publishing House, Jul.2009,at 133.
- 28 Thomas Weigend(GER.), German Criminal Procedure,Yue Liling & Wen Xiaojie translating, China University of Political Science and Law press, Jan.2004,at 87,88.

voluntarily, the period of 24 hours runs from the time of their arrest and not the time of arrival at the police station. The period may not be interrupted or delayed, except:

- (a) when there are reasonable grounds for believing not delaying or interrupting the period would:
 - (i) involve a risk of harm to people or serious loss of, or damage to, property;
 - (ii) delay unnecessarily the person's release from custody; or
 - (iii) otherwise prejudice the outcome of the investigation;
- (b) at the request of the detainee, their appropriate adult or legal representative;
- (c) when a delay or interruption is necessary in order to:
 - (i) comply with the legal obligations and duties arising under *section 15*; or
 - (ii) to take action required under *section 9* or in accordance with medical advice.

If the period is interrupted in accordance with (a), a fresh period must be allowed. Interruptions under (b) and (c) do not require a fresh period to be allowed.

Therefore, the length of interrogations in UK can be 16 hours at most; and the length may be extended in the exceptional cases. It combines principle of denying grueling interrogation, with flexibility which takes the individual cases into consideration. Besides, specific rest period is stipulated in section 12.8 that:

Breaks from interviewing should be made at recognized meal times or at other times that take account of when an interviewee last had a meal. Short refreshment breaks shall be provided at approximately two hour intervals, subject to the interviewer's discretion to delay a break if there are reasonable grounds for believing it would:

- (i) involve a:
 - risk of harm to people;
 - serious loss of, or damage to, property;
- (ii) unnecessarily delay the detainee's release; or
- (iii) otherwise prejudice the outcome of the investigation.

12B: Meal breaks should normally last at least 45 minutes and shorter breaks after two hours should last at least 15 minutes. If the interviewer delays a break in accordance with paragraph 12.8 and prolongs the interview, a

*longer break should be provided. If there is a short interview and another short interview is contemplated, the length of the break may be reduced if there are reasonable grounds to believe this is necessary to avoid any of the consequences in paragraph 12.8(i) to (iii).*²⁹

In practices, most of the length of interrogations are controlled within 2 – 4 hours.³⁰

At the same time, in order to avoid the illegal interrogation by the police, the lawyer-on-site right and the overall video and audio recording system during interrogation are provided in PACE.³¹ The right about the length of interrogations is also provided in 'Notice of Right to the Person detained by the Police' released by the Law Society.³² This makes it available for the suspect to understand the length of interrogations before the start of it, which sets the 'firewall' for prevention of grueling interrogation on aspect of notification of procedural rights. Besides, as for the exclusion of the evidence obtained by grueling interrogation, both the defendant and the court can start the evidence legality determination procedure, and standard of proof of evidence legality by prosecution should be 'beyond a reasonable doubt'. Once it is determined by the court that the evidence is obtained by grueling interrogation, it will be excluded as illegal evidence without exception.³³ These provisions establish the effective barrier for prevention of grueling interrogation.

D. Supporting Mechanism Prevention Model

France is the representative country of this model. It is not determined in the New Criminal Procedure Code of April 2011 that what is the behavior of illegal collection of evidence, and no length of interrogation is limited. However, it does not mean the lack of attention to illegation collection of evidence in France. On the contrary, the great modification of the Criminal Procedure Code in 2011 mainly aimed at making up for the procedural defect

²⁹ The Stationery Office, *Police and Criminal Evidence Act 1984—Code C*, Crown copyright 2014, at 39-41.

³⁰ See Home Office of UK, 'Modernising Police Powers—Review of the Police' (2007), *Policing Policy and Operations Directorate*, at 10.

³¹ See Weng Yijie, 'Recorded and Videotaped Interrogations in the Great Britain and Their Enlightenment', (2010) 3 *Modern Law Science*, at 104-111.

³² See Law Society of England and Wales 'notice of right', 2015, available at <http://www.lawsociety.org.uk/>.

³³ See *Police and Criminal Evidence Act 1984*, Part VIII, Confession.

in criminal detention and preventing the behaviors of illegal collection of evidence of the police. In order to prevent the behaviors of illegal collection of evidence of the investigators during pre-trial detention, the French Interior Minister required on March 11th 2003 that various detention facilities 'shall ensure that the persons in custody have heated foods during normal meal time, and shall provide food according to the religious faith they claimed'. It is provided in section 64 of the Criminal Procedure Code that 'judicial police officials shall note down the length of each interrogation, the interval between interrogations and the time for having meals on the records of the persons in custody.'³⁴ In order to prevent the illegal interrogation, the Code also enlarges the range of the right notification to the suspects, and recovers the notification obligation by the investigators of 'the right to silence', and sets up the lawyer-on-site right for the person being questioned and confronted in custody. The lawyer can also note down the contents of questioning and confrontation. On April 15th 2011, the French Court of Cassation made four judgments in a way of full court adjudication, to clearly require the intervention of the lawyer from the first hour as the detention, and any conflicting provision is invalid.³⁵ We can see that the legislative institution of France prevents and restrains grueling interrogation by governing criminal detention which may act as the carrier of illegal interrogation.

As for the confession obtained by illegal means, the rule of 'Procedure Behavior Invalidity' is provided in section 171 and section 802 in the Criminal Procedure Code of France. One of the reasons of invalid interrogation is the breach of procedural law, which includes grueling interrogation. Besides, the Code also sets the overall video and audio recording system and serious the responsibility system to prevent the illegal interrogation behavior including grueling interrogation.

Therefore, we can see that the grueling interrogation is identified as one of illegal interrogations by the main countries with an adequate legal system, and it is the key object of prevention of criminal process. Whether Anglo-American Law System country or Civil Law System country deny the illegal interrogation which seriously infringes upon human rights in their statutory codes or judicial precedents. In the four models for

34 Adapted from Shi Pengpeng, 'The Truth Discovery under the Control Power Mode: a Review of the French Detention System', (2010)6 *Journal of Comparative Law*, at 92.

35 Yu Liang, 'France the Latest Detention System Reform', (2012)2 *Journal of Comparative Law*, at 151.

identifying and preventing grueling interrogation, the first three models present progressiveness: the rules of Discretion Model lay stress on the principle, and the rules of Comprehensive Regulations Model are the strictest. Of course, the first three models have a lot in common to prevention of grueling interrogation: (1) It identifies grueling interrogation on the subjective standard of violating the 'voluntariness' of the suspect. (2) It identifies grueling interrogation on the objective standard that length of interrogation is out of reach for normal person. Whether the law limits it on the specific length of interrogation or not, it is determined in rules of different models that the exceeding of certain limit of length of interrogation is the inherent feature of grueling interrogation. (3) The identification of grueling interrogation needs the specific analysis on individual cases, i.e., the combination between the principle and the flexibility. The procedure indicators own the discretion, more or less. Besides, the rules of the fourth model open a new path: it prevents grueling interrogation through the exquisite design of supporting mechanism. So, different models have the 'trump card' in prevention of grueling interrogation, in which the rules of Comprehensive Regulations Model and Supporting Mechanism Prevention Model are the most overall, such as the stipulations of the lawyer-on-site during interrogation, the overall video and audio recording system, exclusion of illegal evidence and responsibility mechanism.

3. Criteria of Identification

We can see from the regulating to grueling interrogation of different models that the over long length of interrogation is the main standard for identification of grueling interrogation, which is more specific than the 'fuzzy' standards such as 'voluntariness' and 'voluntary confession', and it is easier to be mastered by the investigators. Therefore, as for the identification of grueling interrogation, it is necessary to follow the rules of Comprehensive Regulations Model, and take the rules of Supporting Mechanism Prevention Model for reference, to take the length of interrogation as the main criteria which combine with other objective criterias to form a set of 'Statutory Criterias' for identification of grueling interrogation. At the same time, the individual situation and exceptional cases also have significant influence on the formation of grueling interrogation, we can take these factors as the 'discretion standards' for identification of grueling interrogation. The decision maker can directly determine the existence of grueling interrogation when circumstances of the case is in accordance with statutory criterias and no

discretion standards; the decision maker shall judge by taking various situations into consideration on the identification of grueling interrogation when circumstances of the case is in accordance with the discretion standards.

A. Statutory Criterias

(1) Investigators are the subjects of implementation of grueling interrogation. It is stipulated in China's Criminal Procedure Law that only the investigators of public security organs, people's procuratorate or other organs of investigation are the 'qualified' subject of interrogation. Therefore, the executors of grueling interrogation shall be investigators.

(2) Suspects or witnesses are the objects of grueling interrogation. Although the object of the word 'interrogation' refers to the suspect, but it is further stipulated in Article 54 of Criminal Procedure Law that, 'a witness or victim statement obtained by violence, threat, or other illegal means shall be excluded.' In which the 'illegal means' includes the grueling strategy. And some 'stain witnesses' are likely to be interrogated by investigators. So, witnesses can also become the objects of grueling interrogation.

(3) Grueling interrogation refers to the behavior of extorting confessions by means of depriving sleep and rest for long time. The 'long time' is the key element for the identification of grueling interrogation. The academic circle has different opinions on it: according to some scholars, the accumulated length of interrogation within 24 hours shall not exceed than 12 hours; according to other scholars, the continuous rest time within 24 hours shall not be less than 6 hours.³⁶ Otherwise, it will be identified as grueling interrogation. As for the two plans, the first one is the 'accumulated' calculation of the rest time, which deprives the continuous rest time of the suspect; and the length of interrogation in the latter plan can still reach 18 hours, which is difficult to avoid grueling interrogation. Therefore, some scholars propose that the continuous time of interrogation shall not exceed than 24 hours during the detention period, during which the rest time shall be provided with the interval of at least 6 hours, and the rest time of each time shall not be less than 3 hours (including having meals), and the interval between two interrogations shall not be less than 24 hours.³⁷ Other scholars propose that the continuous

time of each interrogation shall not exceed than 5 hours; 2 hours interval are needed between two interrogations.³⁸ According to the author, both of the two plans are too complicated; besides, too short length of interrogation will bring large difficulty for investigation and interrogation, there's a danger of overcorrecting. Some scholars argued that it is necessary to forbid night-time interrogation; it shall be prohibited to carry on interrogation during 23 o'clock- 8 o'clock of the next day, unless there is the authorized conditions stipulated by the law.³⁹ Accordign to the author, the adoption of the 'nine-to-five' interrogation model will bring extreme difficulty to the investigation and detection. To sum up, the length of interrogation can be limited as: the continuous length of interrogation shall not exceed than 12 hours; the continous rest time shall not be less than 6 hours within any 24 hours. When the interrogation lasts beyond 12 hours, or 6 hours of continuous rest time in every 24 hours is not guaranteed, the behavior shall be identified as grueling interrogation. It is the time length standard for identification of grueling interrogation.

B. Discretion Standards

(1) The time length for interrogating special subjects. When the interrogated subjects are the vulnerable members such as the person under age, the elderly over 70, the disabled, the person suffered from disease and the pregnant woman, it is needed to shorten the stipulated maximum length of interrogation, and prolong the rest time. The length of interrogation shall be correspondingly adjusted for special subjects, which is an important aspect of human rights protection in criminal justice. The person who makes the determination shall exercise discretion to determine the time length standard of grueling interrogation.

(2) Exceptional cases. Besides the above-mentioned positive conditions, there are some negative conditions for identification of grueling interration. It will seriously strike the investigation of the case if the decision maker dertemines the grueling interrogation directly without considering any special conditions when the interrogation exceeds than the legal time length. By taking the rules of Comprehensive Regulations Model as the

36 Li Li, 'Whether Grueling Interrogation is Extorting Confessions by Torture?', *China Youth News* Sep.3, 2011.

37 Guo Zhiyuan, 'Summary of the Seminar On the Rule of Illegal Evidence Exclusion', *People's Court Daily* Dec.

4, 2013.

38 Mao Jiangzhou & Guo Zhijian, 'An Empirical Study On the Application of The Rule of Illegal Evidence Exclusion', in Zhang Zhihui, *China's Procuratorial System: A Study On the Amendment of Criminal Procedure Law*, Peking University press Vol.10.

39 Zheng Xi, 'Voluntary Confession Rule in China', (2013)5 *Evidence Science*, at 542.

reference, these negative conditions shall at least include: Firstly, exception in good faith. If the suspect does not propose any claim at the first stage of the criminal procedure, and proposes being grueling interrogated on ground of ill health in follow-up procedure, the proposition shall be rejected according to the 'exception in good faith' principle. Secondly, exception of own will. If the suspect is willing to accept the long time interrogation, it shall not be determined as grueling interrogation. Of course, it is needed to pay special attention to evidence collection for this situation, and strict review shall be conducted. Thirdly, exceptions in emergency. The crimes with serious danger to state security and public security may lead to serious personal casualty and property loss; it is unfavorable to combat such crimes or may lead to more serious crime if the person makes determination identifies the interrogation behaviour exceeding than the legal time length as the grueling interrogation and excludes the evidences without distinction. Therefore, the decision maker shall exercise discretion to the identification of grueling interrogation, the legal time length should be extended in such circumstances. Fourthly, the exceptions for the rights and interests of the suspect. If the interruption of the sleep of the suspect is to terminate the compulsory measures, or perform the obligation of notification, or make for the medical examination, it shall not be determined as grueling interrogation. In short, it should be strictly grasped whether circumstances of the case is in accordance with negative conditions, and the investigator should present evidences to illustrate there are exceptions, for the decision maker to exercise discretion.

4. Prevention Measures

The identification of grueling interrogation is the premise of the prevention of it, and the prevention is the purpose of the identification of it. Borrowing abroad experiences, we shall conduct prevention of grueling interrogation with the following aspects.

A. Overall Video and Audio Recording System

It is necessary to ensure the 'integrity' of the video and audio, and it is required to keep the whole course video and audio recording without any interruption from the time that the suspect was captured to the time that the suspect was delivered to the house of detention. Secondly, it is needed to ensure the validity of video and audio recording, i.e., when there is conflict between the record and the video, the video shall prevail.

B. The Startup of Inquiry Procedure of Grueling Interrogation

The defense shall be the certainly subject of the startup of the inquiry procedure, who can claim the invalidity of the evidence obtained by grueling interrogation during pretrial conference, court proceedings and trial on appeal. Besides, if the clue of grueling interrogation is detected by the judge during reviewing case materials, the judge shall take the initiative to start the inquiry procedure of grueling interrogation ex officio. The earlier the evidence obtained by grueling interrogation is detected and excluded, the less harm to the procedure. Therefore, if grueling interrogation is detected by the people's procuratorate during investigation and approval of arrest process, the evidence obtained by this means shall be excluded.

C. Exclusion of the Evidence Obtained by Grueling Interrogation

Firstly, if the suspect made a confession through grueling interrogation, 'repeated confession' shall be identified as obtaining from grueling interrogation, and be excluded, even though there is no illegal behaviors in the following interrogations. The reason for the adoption of the 'taking a drastic measure to deal with a situation' method is to avoid that investigators evade the exclusionary rules of illegal evidence by utilizing the repeated confession that obtain from grueling interrogation, and to make every effort to stop the behavior of grueling interrogation. Secondly, if the material evidence is obtained by the only grueling interrogation, this evidence shall be excluded. If grueling interrogation influences the authenticity of the material evidence, the evidence shall be excluded, although there is no 'fruits of the poisonous tree doctrine' in our procedure law,

D. Responsibility Mechanism

Firstly, penal responsibilities. The pain caused by grueling interrogation is not less than that of extorting confessions by torture; therefore, grueling interrogation shall be included in the range of being charged with penal responsibility in the future. Secondly, internal disciplinary sanction. Once the procedural sanction is started by the court, some cases may fail in public prosecution because of the exclusion of evidence, it may lead to the result that the criminals escape legal punishment. Therefore, it is necessary to perfect the internal punishment mechanism of investigating authorities to prevent grueling interrogation.

Citizens' Political Preference, Contacted Police Experiences, and Attitudes Toward the Police in Taiwan: An Application of Easton's Theory

Lai, Yung-Lien, PhD, and Tsai, Tyan-Muh, PhD

Central Police University, Taiwan

Abstract

Although the past decade has witnessed the burgeoning of studies on public attitudes toward the Taiwan police, several issues remain unknown, including the multi-dimensions of public assessments of police and the impact of political preference and public contacted police experiences on public attitudes toward the police. Using data obtained from a telephone survey of 1,806 citizens residing in Taipei Metropolitan area (covers Taipei and New Taipei cities with the population of 5.5 million aged 18 years and up) in May 2014, the results drawn from Confirmatory Factor Analysis (CFA) indicate that residents' attitudes toward the police is a multi-dimensional construct consisting of two factors: general attitudes (also named diffuse attitudes) and specific attitudes (namely satisfaction with police services in community), which means that Easton's Theory has been confirmed in this study. Among those predictors, results from a series of OLS regression found compared to holding neutral position, respondents with pan-blue political part reported higher levels of attitudes toward the police across two dimensions after controlling for other variables. At the same time, pan-green party respondents only tended to harbor lower levels on diffuse attitudes. Consistent with previous studies, police-initiated contact, education attainment level, married, victimization, fear of crime, collective efficacy, and perceived crime & disorder significantly erodes the levels of public assessments to police across two dimensions. Taipei citizens reported higher levels of satisfaction with police services compared to their counterparts.

Keywords: attitudes toward the police, political preference, contact with police, Easton's Theory, Taipei metropolitan

The Impacts of Police Contact: Findings from a survey in Thailand

Prapon Sahapattana

National Institute of Development Administration

Abstract

Police contact has been a topic of study for a long time in western countries. Many studies found the relationship between police contact and other variables. This study aims to investigate the impacts of police contact on various factors including police performance, police confidence, and police legitimacy. Survey data in 2013 from central provinces in Thailand were analyzed to find out the relationship. Policy implications from the study are discussed.

Introduction

Police works often involve with the activities that a police officer contacts with citizens in their daily routine working. The consequences from the contact may possibly create positive or negative impress to the individuals whom the police interact with. Although the officer performs his or her duty accordance with the exist roles, law, and regulations for the best of public's interest, the negative result are unavoidable. The dilemma of police work that running in the middle of two concepts: due process and public security, are still inevitably going on in every democratic country. Laws in each country, many times appear in the Constitution, try to limit the power exercising by police in the routine job involving law enforcement, order maintenance, crime prevention, or public service. In the midst of new technology and development in various aspects, the modern society requires law enforcement agency work more efficiency in order to catch up with the new change including different approach in crime control and public service providing. The difficulty for the balancing resulting in many measures in administration such as refining police recruitment and training, reviewing police organization policy to prevent police improper activity at work, and informing general public for more understanding the police work for instance.

Literature Review

Many concepts related to police, such as police confidence, police performance, and police legitimacy, from the perception of their citizens have been linked to many independent factors, mostly include personal background, neighborhood condition and police contact. Race is found significantly related with police confidence (Brown & Benedict, 2002; Schafer, 2003; Tuch & Weitzer,

1997, for example). Racial minorities expressed less confidence in police and the result is true for African-Americans as well. Many research studies (Cao & Solomon Zhao, 2005; Ren et al., 2005; Reisig & Correia, 1997; Sahapattana & Cobkit, 2016; Stack & Cao, 1998; for example) also found that age is significantly related with public confidence in police. Younger people seem to have more freedom and liberal ways of thinking compared to older people. The liberal thinking leads to the tendency to disagree with the power of authority including police. However, the effect of gender on the confidence in police was found by studies (Correia et al., 1996; Reisig & Parks, 2000; Sahapattana & Cobkit, 2016; Sampson & Bartusch, 1998) in mixed results. Studies also found relationship between neighborhood conditions and public perception on police (Cao et al., 1996; Maxson et al., 2003; Reisig & Giacomazzi, 1998; Sprott & Doob, 2009; for example). People reported that police act more improper in disorganized areas (Mastrofski et al., 2002; Terrill & Reisig, 2003).

Personal experience with police has been a focus for studying in the western countries for a long time. The focus attention is to investigate how the impact of encounters with police has on people who has contact with police. The studies of the direct contact with police show that bad experience from police has more impact than positive on citizens (Li et al., 2016; Skogan, 2006 for example).

Methods

Data

The data for this study came from a survey in a big city in Thailand conducted between July and August 2013. In order to obtain respondents who have contacted with police, the researcher team chose one of locations to collect data from

police stations. Other research sites for this study were locations with a lot of people visited like markets. Nine police station jurisdictions in the studied city were randomly picked from 89 police stations. The sample composed of 540 respondents. Due to the small number of police stations, the representativeness of sample is not justified. One type of questionnaire was distributed to respondents for self-administer during 9.00 A.M. to 5 P.M. by four members of researcher team who received a training for collecting the data. A one sample t-test was used to analyze the data.

Measures

Dependent variables

There are three dependent variables in this study: police performance, police confidence, and police legitimacy. Police performance was measured by nine questions asking respondents to answer. The answers range from 1 meaning least agree to 10 meaning strongly agree. These questions include police officers set up checkpoints at regularly appropriate intervals; police officers are able to control illicit behavior in shady areas; police officers dutifully patrol their area regularly; police officers visit citizens and participate in meetings and activities regularly; police officers give citizens advice regarding safety of self and belongings; police officers arrive at the scene quickly and are able to take control of the situation in time; police officers have the capabilities to investigate sufficiently after an incident; police officers are able to follow and apprehend offenders quickly; and police officers are able to efficiently control illegal drugs.

The data for the variable police confidence obtained from a question asked respondents to report the level of confidence they have on police. The answers contain four scales ranging from not at all (0) to strongly confidence (3). Police legitimacy was measured using seven questions. Similar to the variable police performance, the answers range from 1 meaning least agree to 10 meaning strongly agree. These questions include police officers carry out their duties efficiently and effectively, while keeping in mind the greater good; police officers have professionalism, using their knowledge and abilities to do their duties, such as apprehending and neutralizing, gathering evidence, carrying out investigation and taking custody; police officers do not use excessive force or violence while doing their duty; police officers uphold their work ethic while doing their duty; police officers strictly and without bias respect the rights of citizens as per the constitution and human rights; police officers are aware of and appropriately behave according

to their role in protecting the people, for example maintaining a friendly appearance, being helpful and gentle to all citizens; and police officers are honest and moral.

Independent variable

In this study, police contact is dichotomized into two categories: never and ever contact the police. Furthermore, respondents who ever contacted the police were dichotomized into two groups: citizen initiate and police initiate. The citizen-initiated contact came from citizen calling for assistance from the police while the police-initiated contact included being arrested for a crime, for a traffic violation, and being searched.

Results

Table 1

Descriptive statistics of the respondents (N = 540)

Variables	Percent	Mean	SD	Min	Max
Police performance		55.34	11.89	10	90
Police confidence		1.93	.64	0	3
Police legitimacy		43.47	9.49	7	70
Police contact					
Yes	70.09				
No	29.91				
Citizen initiated	34.10				
Police initiated	65.90				
Age		38.05	11.20	18	70
Gender					
Male	52.74				
Female	47.26				
Employment					
Yes	88.78				
No	11.21				
Education					
<High school	18.90				
Middle school	25.11				
High school	31.38				
Associate BA degree	9.86				
BA degree or higher	14.75				
Income (converted to \$US later)					
<5,000 Baht	6.05				
5,001-15,000 Baht	60.74				
15,001-25,000 Baht	24.62				
>25,000 Baht	8.59				

Data collected from 540 samples composes of male for 52.74%. The average age was 38.05 years old. Majority, 88.78%, of them were employed. More than three quarters, 75.39%, had high school education or below and more than half, 66.79%, earned 15,000 Baht, approximately US\$416, or

below a month. Majority, 70.09%, of respondents have experience in contact with police. Most of the contacts, 65.90%, were initiated by police and the rest, 34.10% were initiated by the respondents.

Table 2

T-Test Results of Mean Scores for Samples in the Studied City (N = 540)

	Police contact		t	df
	Yes	No		
Police performance	56.08	54.99	.954	520
Police confidence	1.93	1.93	-.028	531
Police legitimacy	43.58	43.41	.196	523

The differences in the mean scores of three variables between the two groups: the group of respondents who had experience in contacting with police and the group who never had a contact were shown in table 2. There are no significant differences in the mean scores in all three variables: police performance, police confidence, and police legitimacy.

Table 3

T-Test Results of Mean Scores for Samples who had citizen-initiated contact and never had a contact (N = 234)

	Citizen-initiated contact		t	df
	Yes	No		
Police performance	52.54	56.08	2.53*	156
Police confidence	2.05	1.93	-1.55	186
Police legitimacy	41.26	43.58	1.97*	228

*= $p \leq .05$

When considered only the respondents who had citizen-initiated contact and compared to the respondents who never had a contact, the result is different. The group of respondents who has never contacted the police reported significantly higher score, mean = 56.08, in police performance compared to the group who has citizen-initiated contact, mean = 52.54. Also for police legitimacy, the group of respondents without police contact reported significantly higher score, mean = 43.58, compared to the group with citizen-initiated contact, mean = 41.26. However, the mean scores

for police confidence from the two groups were not significantly different.

Table 4

T-Test Results of Mean Scores for Samples who had police-initiated contact and never had a contact (N = 303)

	Police-initiated contact		t	df
	Yes	No		
Police performance	54.62	56.08	1.04	291
Police confidence	1.81	1.93	1.49	301
Police legitimacy	42.83	43.58	.70	298

When compared the group of respondents who had police-initiated contact compared to the group of respondents who never had a contact, the means for each group are not significantly different in all three aspects: police performance, police confident, and police legitimacy. It should be notice that the means score for the group of respondents without contact are higher than the group with the police-initiated contact in all three aspects.

Table 5

T-Test Results of Mean Scores for Samples who had citizen-initiated contact and police-initiated contact (N = 217)

	Police contact		t	df
	Citizen-initiated	Police-initiated		
Police performance	52.54	54.62	1.38	172
Police confidence	2.05	1.81	-2.92**	193
Police legitimacy	41.26	42.83	1.20	212

**= $p \leq .01$

When the group of respondents with citizen-initiated contact and the group with police-initiated contact were compared, the only result for police confidence is significant different. The mean score for the group with citizen-initiated contact, 2.05, is higher than the mean score for the group with police-initiated contact, 1.81.

Discussion

The results from this study confirm studies in the impact of police contact on public perceptions. Data collected from a big city in Thailand in 2013 indicates that their perceptions on police performance, police confidence, and police legitimacy between the group that never contact the police and the group that has contacted police in general were not significantly different. However, when the police contact was categorized according to how it was initiated, citizen or police initiated, the results show interesting findings. Respondents having no experience with police contact reported significantly higher score on police performance and police legitimacy than those who had experience with citizen-initiated contact. In this study, this kind of contact covers only the contact that the respondents request help from police. This finding indicate that people who never contact with police see police in a positive way in police performance and police legitimacy than after they asked for assistances from police. The perceptions of the performance and legitimacy of police dropped after they have citizen-initiated police contact. These findings indicate the useful feedback to police organization about the service they received and the legitimacy they perceived during contact the police.

When the police contact was analyzed by taking only the police-initiated contact into account, the perceptions of performance, confidence, and legitimacy of police between the group of samples who have a police-initiated contact were not significantly different from the group that never contact with police. This result reveals that the perceptions on police of respondents who never contact with the police and those who had police-initiated contact were not difference. When the data from the respondents who never contact the police was taken out, the finding makes the picture clearer. Only the perception on police confidence was significant. Respondents who had citizen-initiated contact reported higher score on police confidence than those who had police-initiated contact, and the rest, police performance and police legitimacy, were not different. When combine it with the results mentioned earlier, it points out that police are doing a good job on making public trust when they are working, especially for the citizen-initiated contact. In the opposite, police are not doing a good job in their work for the citizen-initiated contact to reflect their performance and their legitimacy.

References

- Brown, B. & Benedict, W. (2002). Perceptions of the police: Past findings, methodological issues, conceptual issues and policy implications. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management*, 25, 543 - 580.
- Cao, L., & Solomon Zhao, J. (2005). Confidence in the police in Latin America. *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 33, 403–412.
- Correia, M., Reisig, M., & Lovrich, N. (1996). Public perceptions of state police: An analysis of individual-level and contextual variables. *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 24, 17–28.
- Schafer, J.A., Huebner, B.M. & Bynum, T.S. (2003), Citizen perceptions of police services: Race, neighborhood context and community policing. *Police Quarterly*, 6, 440 - 468.
- Tuch, S.A. & Weitzer, R. (1997). The polls: Racial differences in attitudes toward the police. *Public Opinion Quarterly*, 61, 642 - 663.
- Reisig, M.D. & Correia, M.E. (1997). Public evaluation of police performance: An analysis across three levels of policing. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management*. 20, 311 - 325.
- Reisig, M. D., & Parks, R. B. (2000). Experience, quality of life, and neighborhood context: A hierarchical analysis of satisfaction with police. *Justice Quarterly*, 17, 607–630.
- Ren, L., Cao, L., Lovrich, N., & Gaffney, M. (2005). Linking confidence in the police with the performance of the police: Community policing can make a difference. *Journal of Criminal Justice*, 33, 55–66.
- Sahapattana, P. & Cobkit, S. (2016). The relationships between police performance and public confidence: a case study of Thailand. *Police Practice and Research*, 17, 171-182.
- Stack, S., & Cao, L. (1998). Political conservatism and confidence in the police: A comparative analysis. *Journal of Crime and Justice*, 21, 71–76.
- Maxson, C., Hennigan, K. & Sloane, D.C. (2003). *Factors That Influence Public Opinion of the Police*, National Institute of Justice, United States Department of Justice, Washington, DC.
- Reisig, M.D. & Giacomazzi, A. (1998). Citizen perceptions of community policing: Are attitudes toward police important. *Policing*, 21, 547 - 561.

-
- Cao, L., Frank, J., & Cullen, F. T. (1996). Race, community context and confidence in the police. *American Journal of Police*, 15, 3 – 22.
- Terrill, W. & Reisig, M.D. (2003). Neighborhood context and police use of force. *Journal of Research in Crime & Delinquency*, 40, 291 - 321.
- Mastrofski, S., Reisig, M.D. & McCluskey, J.D. (2002). Police disrespect toward the public: An encounter-based analysis. *Criminology*, 39, 519 - 552.
- Skogan, W.G. (2006). Asymmetry in the Impact of Encounters with Police. *Policing & Society*, 16(2), 99 – 126.
- Li, Y., Ren, L., & Luo, F. (2016). Is bad stronger than good? The impact of police-citizen encounters on public satisfaction with police. *Policing: An International Journal of police Strategies & Management*, 39(1), 109 – 126.

Information, Democracy and the Rule of Law: Three Dimensions of Police Strategical Innovation

Xing Panzhou

Jiangsu Police Institute

Abstract

At the moment, police administrative power has touched every aspect of social life. Police management affairs are decided by policing bodies through administrative decision-making process. Therefore, good governance and the improvement of policing efficiency are closely related to police decision-making capacity. Information technology development undoubtedly provides strong platform support for management tools of social progress and innovation. The information source of police administrative decision-making is greatly expanded, while information technology serves to optimize participating bodies of decision-making process, enhancing the capability of police organizations. In order to integrate technical rationality and system construction, we need to build a three-dimensional platform of informationization, democratization and the rule of law, giving full play to the improvement of policing strategy innovation. We need to enhance and promote the innovation of policing strategies with mechanism guarantee and technological application.

Keywords: informationization; democratization; rule of law; policing strategy innovation; administrative decision-making ability



Session 4



New Challenge of Cross-border Policing Cooperation of Taiwan

Samuel, Lin

Central Police University, Taiwan

Terrorists involved in the attack in Paris on November 2015 has been arrested in Belgium and deported to France for trials. This case involved policing cooperation of many countries, and manifesting the importance of the Interpol. If it wasn't for the red notice provided by French Police, the suspect might have fled to another country and planning for their next attack, and any country can be the next victim. Therefor by helping France Police, all of memberships of Interpol also helping themselves, this is the original purposes for why the Interpol was established.

Taiwan signed out of the Interpol since 1984, making it difficult to acquire latest information about international crime. Also, Taiwan is not able to provide information about new criminal measures by blue notice of Interpol.

During the past three decades, the cross-boards fraud of Taiwan criminals have changed their measures of committing scams. Although Taiwan is not membership of the Interpol, Taiwanese criminals still have permeated through every country. National Police Agency of Taiwan has sent his police liaison officers to countries in the Southeast Asia, South Africa, the USA and Korea.

However, the games of "Tom and Jerry" seemed to expand to more countries instead of being solved. 2014 November, a fraud scams lead by the Taiwanese and Chinese people were under custody by the Kenya Police Agency due to an outbreak fire that killed one man revealing the problem of international fraud.

The global security agenda are confronted with significant security challenges. Terrorism, organized crime and cybercrime increasingly threaten societies in every corner of the world.

How Taiwan faces the challenge of cross-board criminals may also point out the new agenda of global securities.

New challenge of Cross-border policing cooperation of TAIWAN

SAMUEL, LIN

Ph.D. student

College of Justice Administration
Central Police University, TAIWAN

1

Abstract

- ❑ Modern fraud cases are not victimless crimes. A single scam can destroy a company or family by wiping out their life savings, or billions of dollars.
- ❑ Terrorist attack case involved policing cooperation of many countries.
- ❑ Fraud scam case involved policing cooperation as well.

2

1. The evolution of Fraud case in TAIWAN

- 1) Traditional Fraud case
- 2) Message or advertisement cheating case
- 3) Violence and threats cheating case
- 4) Money laundering fraud

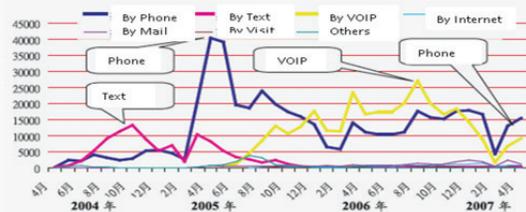
3

3. Development of Transnational corporation

Year	Country	Agreement
2016/01/29	Salvador	ACUERDO ENTRE EL MINISTERIO DEL INTERIOR DE LA REPUBLICA DE CHINA (TAIWAN) Y EL MINISTERIO DE JUSTICIA Y SEGURIDAD PUBLICA DE LA REPUBLICA DE EL SALVADOR, SOBRE LA COOPERACION EN ASUNTOS DE MIGRACION Y LA PREVENCION DE LA TRAMA Y TRAFICO DE PERSONAS
2013/06/01	SOUTH AFRICA	ARRANGEMENT BETWEEN THE TAIPEI LIAISON OFFICE IN THE REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA AND THE SOUTH AFRICAN LIAISON OFFICE IN TAIPEI ON COOPERATION IN THE LEGAL FIELD
2013/06/08	NAURU	AGREEMENT BETWEEN THE MINISTRY OF THE INTERIOR OF THE REPUBLIC OF CHINA (TAIWAN) AND THE MINISTRY OF JUSTICE AND BORDER CONTROL OF THE REPUBLIC OF NAURU CONCERNING COOPERATION IN INVESTIGATION AFFAIRS AND HUMAN TRAFFICKING PREVENTION
2014/06/04	SAINT CHRISTOPHER	AGREEMENT BETWEEN THE MINISTRY OF THE INTERIOR OF THE REPUBLIC OF CHINA (TAIWAN) AND THE MINISTRY OF FOREIGN AFFAIRS, DEFENSE AND SECURITY, LABOR, JUSTICE AND LABOR AFFAIRS OF SAINT CHRISTOPHER AND NEVIS ON COOPERATION IN INVESTIGATION AFFAIRS AND HUMAN TRAFFICKING PREVENTION
2013/07/24	SOUTH AFRICA	ARRANGEMENT BETWEEN THE TAIPEI LIAISON OFFICE IN THE REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA AND THE SOUTH AFRICAN LIAISON OFFICE IN TAIPEI ON MUTUAL LEGAL ASSISTANCE IN CRIMINAL MATTERS
2013/04/19	PHILIPPINES	AGREEMENT ON MUTUAL LEGAL ASSISTANCE IN CRIMINAL MATTERS BETWEEN THE TAIPEI ECONOMIC AND CULTURAL OFFICE IN THE PHILIPPINES AND THE MANILA ECONOMIC AND CULTURAL OFFICE IN TAIWAN
2010/04/12	Vietnam	Agreement between the Taipei Economic and Cultural Office in Vietnam and the Vietnam Economic and Cultural Office in Taipei on Judicial Assistance in Criminal Matters
2006/04/20	Cross-strait	Cross-strait Joint Fight against Crime and Mutual Legal Assistance Agreement
2002/03/26	America	Agreement on Mutual Legal Assistance in Criminal Matters between the Taipei Economic and Cultural Representative Office and the American Embassy in Taipei
1994/03/05	Korea	Exchange of Notes Concerning the Agreement on Exchange of Judicial Materials between the Ministry of Justice of the Republic of China and the Ministry of Justice of the Republic of Korea
1985/07/08	Korea	Agreement on Exchange of Judicial Materials between the Ministry of Justice of the Republic of China and the Ministry of Justice of the Republic of Korea

6

1. The evolution of Fraud case in TAIWAN



4

3. Development of Transnational corporation

- 2002 Taiwan & USA
- 2009 Cross-strait
- 2010 Taiwan & Vietnam
- 2013 Taiwan & Philippines
- Con Air Mission of Taiwan & China

7

2. Development of Transnational fraud scams

- 1) Fraudsters targeting Taiwanese in Taiwan
- 2) Taiwanese fraudsters targeting Taiwanese in Mainland China
- 3) Fraud scams in China targeting Mainland China citizen
- 4) Fraud scams has spread to Southeast Asia to target Taiwanese and Chinese citizen.
- 5) Fraud scams has spread internationally

5

4. New challenge of transnational corporation

- Crime without borders vs. Transnational Corporation
- Cybersecurity threats vs. Crime Intelligences
- Money laundering without borders vs. Account and Cash flow tracking

8

4. New challenge of transnational corporation

- Independent trial vs. Evidence links
- Illegal telecommunications training vs. Cross-border policing cooperation & training

9

6. One for all, all for one.

- Today's fraud schemes are more sophisticated than ever, and the NPA of TAIWAN is dedicated to using its skills to track down the culprits and stop scams over all the world.
- The improvement of security cannot only rely on the limited police forces.

11

Synergetic Governance: The Way Public Security Organs Choose for Social Public Security Management Innovation

Jia Hongwen and Xu Aihua

Jiangsu Police Institute

Abstract

At present, with the rapid development of economy and society, there appear different kinds of social contradictions. The problems of social public security are becoming more and more complex while the police force is relatively insufficient and all parts of the social synergetic governance don't play a strong role. The public security organs are facing a severe situation of social public security management. The paper begins with an analysis of the necessity for public security organs to have social management innovation and an interpretation of the concept of social synergetic governance. Based on the public security organs' practice and exploration in strengthening social synergetic governance, the paper puts forward the following effective approaches to social management innovation: strengthen the concept of social public security synergetic governance, identify the roles of the various governance subjects, guide the development of diversified social public security synergetic governance, and improve the relevant operating mechanisms, etc.

[Key words] synergetics, governance, public security, diversification, social management, innovation

With the deepening of the reform of political and economic systems and the appearing of various social contradictions, public security organs are facing unprecedented challenges in the work of social management, among which how to innovate the social management, how to implement scientific and effective management, and how to maintain social harmony and stability have become prominent problems. The Eighteenth National Congress of the CPC gave the general instructions for social management innovation, "To improve the scientific level of the social management, we must strengthen the construction of laws, systems and mechanisms, abilities, talent teams and informationization concerning social management.we must guide social organizations to have a healthy and orderly development and give full play to the basic role of the masses playing in social management." "We need to improve the way of social governance, stimulate the vitality of social organizations, and give full play to the synergy of social organizations to participate in social governance." Therefore, the public security organs must carry out the innovation of social management, change from "control" to "service", separate social functions they shouldn't have or aren't good at, make great efforts to cultivate the social organizations, mobilize the enthusiasm of the public and encourage them to participate more, form the situation of synergetic governance, and truly

meet the social security needs of the social subjects and the diversification of social interests.

1. The necessity of the public security organs' implementation of social management innovation

At present, with the speeding up of the economic development and the pace of social transformation, various conflicts of interest are highlighted. The contradictions between the shortage of police force, complex social public security situation and people's demands for high quality security have become increasingly prominent. Problems of social public security are becoming more and more serious. The public security organs are facing many new situations and problems in the social management work.

1.1 Social contradictions are increasing and public security situations become severe.

With the deepening of the reform, the diversification of interest subjects and the diversity of interest demands, a variety of complicated social contradictions appear, thus group events have occurred sometimes. One of the reasons is the contradiction of economic interests. The obvious economic contradictions in the present stage include the contradiction between the requirements of the rapid economic development and the lack of resources and the more environmental pressures,

the contradiction between the requirements of balancing urban and rural development and the deepening of dual economic structure, and the contradiction between the requirement of common prosperity and the widening gap between the rich and the poor, etc. These conflicts and problems in the area of the economy are the roots of many social contradictions. Another reason is the contradiction in the political field, such as the contradiction between the implementation of the “rule of law” and the “rule of man”, the contradiction between the objective existence of “official standard” behavior of the government and various departments and the difficulty of implementing civic discourse power, the contradiction between the public security service and the social development and people’s demand. The third reason is the contradiction in ideological and cultural area. People’s value orientation, views and ideas, spiritual pursuits are becoming diversified, based on which the ideological contradiction appears. The ideological contradiction is an important ideological root of social conflicts, instability and unrest.^[1] Therefore, the social management of public security organs in China has encountered great challenges. The difficulty of social management has been greatly increased, and the original management systems have been unable to adapt to the increasingly complex and severe situation.

1.2 Police force is relatively insufficient, unable to meet the needs of public safety

At present, on average there are about 3500 policemen per million people in the developed countries, while there are only about 1140 policemen per million people in China, which is far lower than that in the developed countries, even lower than that in some developing countries like Brazil, India.^[2] The problem of insufficient police force still exists objectively, which makes it hard to finish the arduous tasks. At the same time, grassroots police also bear a lot of inspection, security guarding and other temporary tasks, as well as numerous non-police activities. Especially the community police need to participate in the mediation of 80% of all the contradictions and disputes calling for police help, resulting in a number of community police having no enough time and energy to carry out the work of community policing effectively. At the same time, with the rapid development of urbanization, there form many new urban and rural joint-areas, where large-scale residential communities are constructed to accommodate the growing new urban immigrants. But the social management of these communities is often too difficult for the local public security organs to handle. The social order there

is rather chaotic. Illegal and criminal phenomena are relatively prominent; which cannot meet the people’s requirement for security and other needs of social management. At the same time, the public are calling for security of higher quality. One of the objectives of the public security work is to protect the safety of people’s lives and properties, improve people’s sense of security and meet their needs for security. In the theory of Maslow’s hierarchy of needs, Maslow used the terms “physiological”, “safety”, “belongingness” and “love”, “esteem”, and “self-actualization” to describe the pattern that human motivations generally move through.^[3] The hierarchy of needs is often portrayed in the shape of a pyramid with physiological needs at the bottom and the safety needs only second to it. Now people are more and more aware of the value of security, so their requirements for the quality of safety needs are also increasing. Meanwhile, due to the fact that different social classes have different needs for security, people’s needs for security are also showing a diversified trend. Under this circumstance, relying solely on the power of the public security organs does not work. The collaboration of some social organizations and the public is urgently needed to meet the multi-level, diversified security needs of the public. Only through fully mobilizing the social resources available can the public security and public order be more effectively maintained.

1.3 The public are short of the awareness of social synergetic governance and the social organizations don’t play an effective role.

Compared with the past, the development of social organizations in China is relatively rapid, but it is still in the initial stage overall, not mature enough to keep up with the pace of development of the social public security situation. In practice, there are some prominent problems in social organizations and the public force that participation in the maintenance of public security and order.

First of all, the public are lack of subject consciousness of social governance. For a long time, many people think that it is the responsibility of the public security organs and the government to maintain the public order and that it has nothing to do with them, not realizing that they are the subjects of social management. They don’t have the enthusiasm to participate in the social management actively. Take the management of public traffic order as an example, if the public are subject-conscious and rule-conscious and have the basic traffic civilization knowledge; if they think good public traffic order is to bring convenience to everyone and they would like to abide by the traffic rules when

driving or walking, cooperate with the public security organs in the management of traffic order and the establishment of traffic civilization consciousness with a positive attitude, traffic order and safety will be greatly improved. But in fact, due to the public's lack of subject consciousness of social governance, lack of traffic civilization consciousness and rule awareness, and increase in the non-cooperation and antagonism, the issue of traffic order and safety has become a management problem for the public security organs as well as the government. Measures like increasing the police force and applying the monitoring technologies, in a certain extent, indicate the deterioration of the traffic order and the continued growth of the management cost.

Secondly, the public don't participate actively in social management. Ancient Greek philosopher Aristotle once said, "The public affairs belonging to the majority are often least taken care of, people care about their own affairs, neglecting the public affairs. They at most only pay attention to the affairs that have something to do with them more or less."

^[4] At present, the public don't show their subjectivity and initiative in their participation in public affairs and eagerness to have the right to know some information. In addition, due to the lack of direct participation in the social management practice, many people do not have the basic knowledge about social management. They do not know how to participate in social management activities, how to influence upper policies or decisions through participation in social management. They do not know how to express their wishes through different channels. Therefore, when the conflict of interests appears, they often express their demands through illegal or non-standard channels, which results in great pressure on the government and the public security organs in social management.

Finally, the social organizations don't play an effective role. Social organizations are part of the social synergetic governance. The lack of the consciousness of their subject identity and their weak role have greatly influenced the realization of the goal of social governance. First, the overall strength of the social organizations is not good. Generally, the social organizations in China are few in number, limited in talents and short of funds. They are unable to undertake some social management functions transferred from the public security organs, which affects the degree of social synergy. Second, the organization system is not perfect. A lot of social organizations have a low degree of socialization. They are dependent on the government for their daily management and funds. For example, some associations are only established

in the provincial or municipal level, not in the grassroots level. Obviously administrative, they rely too much on the government and lack in the ability of self management and development to a certain degree, which hinders the real transformation of social synergetic governance. Third, the management system has drawbacks. In China, the relevant policies and laws about the establishment and development of social organizations are not perfect. For example, social organizations must first find an upper unit they can anchor, and then they can go to the local civil affairs departments to register. Therefore, in the social life, considerable social organizations have not had the legal registration. It's difficult for them to enjoy the support and preferential treatment by the government. It's also difficult for them to get a wider range of social resources and carry out the social management. Fourth, some social organizations are short of the mechanisms of self management supervision and restraint. Due to the shortage, some social organizations and their members violate the laws and regulations occasionally, which not only destroys their images in the public's mind, but also affects the long-term effect and stability of their own development.

2. The concept of social synergetic governance

Under the new situation of social management, the 18th CPC National Congress put forward the idea of establishing a new pattern of social governance, which is "led by the Party, rest with the government, coordinated by the society, participated by the public and guaranteed by rule of law". The National Congress also determined the objectives and requirements of social governance innovation. The public security organs are required to strengthen the research of the theory and the practice of social synergetic governance based on the current social development and public security work.

2.1 Synergy

In theory, the concept of synergy should be derived from "Synergetics", a widely-used new interdisciplinary science proposed by the meritorious German scientist Haken (H.Haken). The idea of the synergetics was originally derived from the open system of the physics. Haken summarized that the study of synergetics is about a complex system composed of many subsystems interacting in complex ways, which, under certain conditions, have synergistic phenomenon and coherent effects through nonlinearly interaction. Then self organization is formed with the spontaneous formation of macroscopic spatial, temporal, or

functional structures of systems. The transition from non-equilibrium to equilibrium and their phase transformation and function obey the same basic principle. ^[5] “Generally speaking, synergetics can be seen as a kind of strategy to deal with complex systems. In fact, in modern science and society, we have to deal with more and more complex systems, which are composed of many subsystems that interact with each other in a complex manner.” ^[6] Synergetics has been applied to many fields from physics at the beginning to many fields in sociology, and it emphasizes the cooperation among different social subjects. Synergy is not a result, but a dynamic process, a process of stakeholders assuming decision-making responsibility for the vision of their common future. ^[7]

2.2 Governance

There are different ideas about the definition of the word “governance” in the academic circles. Early in 1995, the United Nations Commission on Global Governance delivered a research report entitled “Our Global Partnership”, in which there was a general definition of “governance”. “Governance means the various ways in which all public or private individuals and institutions manage common affairs. It is the continuous process of making conflicting or different interests reconciled and taking a joint operation. This includes not only the formal rules and regulations which people are forced to obey, but also the informal ones that people agree or consider to be in accordance with their interests.” It has four basic characteristics: governance is not a set of rules, nor is it a kind of activity, but a process. The basis of governance process is not control, but coordination. Governance is done by both public sectors and private sectors and it is not a formal system, but a lasting interaction. ^[8] Some western scholars made a further explanation of governance, the term “governance” expresses a concept that political stage is no longer exclusively controlled by the state or government. Governance contains the whole process of rule making, supervision and execution carried out by many interwoven social entities and institutions within and outside the nation. Governance not only refers to government agencies and decisions backed by formal authority, but also includes non-governmental organizations operating in the public sphere, which are increasingly involved in decision-making and policy implementation and supervision. ^[9] In China, the term “governance” was put forth and widely used together with “the comprehensive governance of social security” early in the eighties of the last century, but here the “governance” is in its essence a kind of organized regulate-and-control. ^[10] Of course, the comprehensive governance of social

security is the product of a particular stage in the evolution of governance mode, and also the key to a smooth transition in China. At present, “governance” refers to the process in which the government, social organizations and citizens achieve the optimal allocation of social resources through joint action to meet the public needs for social management. The essence of governance is to abandon the monopoly and compulsory nature of traditional public administration, instead, advocate the cooperation and interaction between government and other social subjects, give full play to the management potential of citizens, the third parties, the social intermediary organizations, promote the participation of all the parties concerned in the public domain, maximize the realization of common interests of all parties, and show a stable and orderly state of public management. ^[11]

2.3 Social public security synergetic governance

In the 1970s, the theory of “governance” and the proposition of “Good Governance” were put forward in the west. This theory emphasizes the synergetic governance by the plural social subjects. The recent report of the CPC Central Committee put forward the idea of establishing a new pattern of social management, which is “led by the Party, rest with the government, coordinated by society, participated by the public”. It should be said that the concept and practice of synergetic governance is the product of social pressure at present. The development course of public governance in every country has been or is facing such a contradiction: On the one hand, the public require the government to continuously improve the quality of public services. On the other hand, the government and its departments have monopoly and low efficiency in providing public services, which cannot meet the growing public demand. These create an internal drive for continuous development and progress of the social governance patterns. Social synergy governance is a new governance paradigm based on governance theory and synergy theory, which emphasizes the diversification of the subjects, the flattening of the relationship and the coordination of action. ^[12] According to the theory of synergetic governance, the government and its departments play the main role and bear the main responsibility of coordinating and managing public affairs, but market forces, social organizations, members of society should share the responsibility of managing public affairs, providing public services and maintaining public order with the government. ^[13] That is to say, the government and relevant departments are not the only subjects, but the dominant power of social governance. Based on the theory of synergetics and the development of

the theory of social synergetic governance discussed above, it is considered that social public security synergetic governance means social organizations and citizens participate in the management of public affairs together and coordinate with one another under the leading of the government and relevant departments to achieve the optimization of social management and finally maintain social harmony and stability.

3. Effective approaches taken by the public security organs to further deepen the synergetic governance of social security

It should be said that social security synergetic governance is the real choice to deal with the current situation of China's social security. There is a certain theoretical and practical basis for social security synergetic governance in China, but under the background of modernization of national governance, public security organs should keep up with the direction and trend of social management innovation, construct new ways to perfect the social management, and jointly safeguard social harmony and stability from the aspects of concept-shaping, diversified development and mechanism of operation, etc.

3.1 Strengthening the concept of social public security synergetic governance and identifying the roles of various governance subjects

If the public security organs want to realize the innovation of social management, they should first change from the old concept to the concept of social public security synergetic governance, and then make clear the different roles and functions of the various governance subjects, including the Party committee and government, the public security organs, social organizations and citizens, etc.

Specifically, the first is to strengthen the concept of multi-participation and cooperation. Social propaganda should be strengthened. All members of the society should develop the concept of synergetic governance. All sectors of society should be encouraged and supported to participate more actively and effectively in the management of social public security. They should have mutual cooperation to give full play to the roles of multiple governance subjects. The social management innovation of the public security organs should be under the leadership of the Party committee and government. The importance of the social public security synergetic governance should be fully recognized. The concept of social "management" should be transformed into the concept of social "governance". We should give

full play to the enthusiasm, initiative and creativity of social organizations and the public in participating in social public security activities and safeguard the security and stability of the society. The second is to make relevant laws and regulations, in which the roles and functions of multiple governance subjects should be defined. Government and functional departments should play their role of proper regulation and guiding, releasing the functions they should not have to the community. Through policy guidance, system regulation and benefit stimulus, the function of social autonomy will be carried out to alleviate the pressure of social contradictions. Social organizations' active participation in governance activities should be protected by legislation. The formulation, revision and promulgation of the laws such as social organization law should be promoted to form a complete, comprehensive and beneficial social organization system of laws and regulations.^[14] Of course, there is still a certain gap between what the government and various functional departments expect from the social organizations and what roles and functions social organizations themselves should have. The gap should be bridged on the basis of scientific and reasonable laws and regulations.

3.2 Making more efforts to foster social forces, and guiding the development of diversified social public security synergetic governance

On the whole, the government should reform the approval and registration management of social organizations, and increase investment in and cultivation of social organizations through purchasing security services and direct financial allocation, etc. To foster social public security synergetic forces and to guide the development of diversified social public security synergetic governance has been substantially significant.

First of all, we need to promote the subject diversification of social public security synergetic governance. British scholar Les Johnston said, "Public and private policing are more and more closely linked. There is not much difference in their forms. Policing work is more and more undertaken by the complex and diverse network of public police, private police, and both."^[15] As for the subjects of the current social public security synergetic governance, the Party committees and governments are the leading subjects, the public security organs are the core subjects, the security service companies and social public security organizations are important subjects, and the public are basic subjects.^[16] Various types of social security synergetic forces should be cultivated according to their different levels and functions. On one hand, we should

strengthen the occupation training of the tightly-knit social public security autonomous organizations, such as security personnel teams of the enterprises and institutions, market-based security personnel teams. These teams play a prominent role in social public security synergetic governance. On the other hand, we should improve the industry associations and establish autonomous social public security organizations in some industries. We should give full play to the functions of these organizations in dispute mediation, reflection of the public complaints and demands, and providing reference for the decision-making. In addition, we should set up some community autonomous groups, such as grass-roots public security organizations and volunteer groups, to absorb active members to participate in crime prevention and conflict mediation, and to maximize the general public's role in community self-governance.

Secondly, we should improve the diversification of social public security synergetic governance responsibility. According to the principle of power in accord with responsibility, the subject diversification of the public security synergetic governance will inevitably require the responsibility diversification of itself. Social organizations undertake the function of social management in spaces that government and functional departments cannot cover. Social organizations assist the government in social management. For example, the security work of large recreational activities should be taken under the supervision and guidance of public security organs. The main management responsibility of the unit concerned should be strengthened. The public is the mass foundation of effective social management activities. Their main responsibilities in the social management activities are participation in and supervision of the social management activities done by the government, the various departments and social organizations, etc.

Finally, we should improve the diversification of social public security synergetic governance patterns. Facing many new problems in the social management, we must strengthen the autonomous management of the urban and rural residents and create multiple forms of social management. For example, the management of migrant population is a major issue of social management in China. At present, China is experiencing the world's largest population flow, and more and more migrant population tends to have long-term settlement in their destination. The livelihood and social management pressure of the migrant population are on the increase.^[17] People of migrant population have a relatively low literacy. They don't have

permanent residence permit in the city of their residence. Their insurance and welfare, labor and employment in the city cannot be well guaranteed. Their illegal and criminal behaviors are obvious in some areas and the security problems caused by the migrant population have become an important factor directly affecting the security in the city.^[18] Therefore, autonomous social organizations like migrant population association are established in some places. Some outstanding migrant workers are invited to take part in the mediation of conflicts and disputes and the protection of social security. Compared with the unilateral management of public security organs, the autonomous social organizations are better in self-management and the forms of participating in synergetic governance, which result in promoting the social harmony and stability. Another approach is in the form of purchasing social security services. Some functions of public service can be picked out from the social public security administration for the social organizations like security service companies to buy through competitive bidding, funding and project application. The fair, open and standardized management can be carried out with systems like publicity, reporting, tendering and bidding, reviewing, supervision and evaluation, etc.

3.3 Improving the operation mechanism and promoting the realization of social public security synergetic governance

Synergetic governance is a whole with different mechanisms mixed together, which form the network of the so-called synergetic governance. The network integrates various social, economic and cultural resources to complete the governance of public affairs together.^[19] The close collaboration and interaction of diversified social subjects need effective governance mechanism. In terms of the mechanism of current social public security synergetic governance, we need to do the following.

Firstly, the resolution mechanism of social conflicts should be improved. At present, the economy is developing rapidly in China and there appears an imbalance among the various interests. Social conflicts are on the increase, which are difficult to resolve timely. Social public security governance is facing many new problems. The ideal mode of social management should aim at resolving social contradictions in the bud, preventing and stopping social contradictions and conflicts from appearing and intensifying through the methods of equal communication, consultation and education guidance. Therefore, it is increasingly important for the public security organs and the

community to lead the establishment of social conflict resolution mechanism. Community as the basic unit of society should pay attention to the mediation of contradictions and try to prevent the intensification of the contradictions and the expansion of events. Organizations of the public security organs coordinating with other social administration organs, social organizations and representatives of the masses and volunteers should be established innovatively. We should go into the community and guide the public to express their complaints and demands in legal and reasonable ways. We should work out the problems reflected by the public timely, ease the negative social emotions, prevent the occurrence of various group events and maintain the social stability and security. The role of social organizations should be particularly emphasized. Social organizations themselves have the non-governmental characteristic. On one hand, social organizations can become the “buffer zone” between the individuals and the public security organs and the government. They can help the different social classes release emotions, express personal wishes and convey the complaints and demands of the interest groups. On the other hand, social organizations can make an inductive analysis of the existing social contradictions. They can get to know and find out the negative factors of the social contradictions so as to reduce and resolve possible social risks. In addition, social organizations have the function of conflict mediation because of their resources of people. Current social contradictions often occur in such specific areas as the doctor-patient conflicts, maintaining consumer rights and interests, labor disputes, property disputes. There is an urgent need to construct professional and industrial organizations of conflicts mediation, establish multi-dimensional mediation mode of social contradictions, strengthen the professional industry associations and build up “the first defense line” that can prevent the grass-roots conflicts from spreading into group events.^[20]

Secondly, a benign interaction mechanism should be formed. All kinds of social governance subjects cannot achieve the synergistic effect of “1 + 1 > 2” or play the overall functions of the management system better without benign interaction of the social management subjects. Synergetic governance is to change the kind of top-down single administrative pattern and establish the benign interaction mechanism of mutual cooperation and supervision between the government and social organizations and the public. For example, social organizations and citizens are attracted to participate in the process of the formulation, implementation and evaluation of social public security policies and

systems. We should understand the needs of all walks of life, collect comprehensive information, provide and absorb rational proposals, and supervise the government and management departments of public security organs. We should improve mutual trust and cooperation and exchange on the basis of equal dialogue, and promote the shift of the public security management from unilateral pattern to bilateral interactive pattern. Based on the experience of foreign countries, the government and public security organs are encouraged to sign the agreement with relevant non-governmental organizations and set up the cooperative relationship. With a clear division of functions, part of the service, public welfare functions will be switched to social organizations to carry out extensive cooperation and provide the necessary funding. The introduction of market mechanisms and integration of various resources will help to maintain the stability of social order.^[21]

Finally, the information sharing mechanism should be improved. Poor communication between the various governance subjects, poor communication between the government and the public, unbalanced allocation of all kinds of governance resources will ultimately affect the effect of governance, and even lead to the occurrence of group events.^[22] Therefore, we should smooth the channels of information and expand the platform of social public security synergetic governance. Strengthening informationization construction is the only way to improve the effectiveness of social management. Modern network and information technology are used to achieve the smooth sharing of information among diversified subjects. Public security organs must strengthen the construction of information network of social governance, establish a standardized and efficient dynamic information collection mechanism, timely and accurately grasp the dynamic basic information of the society, and promote information sharing and openness with the help of advanced network technology. The various social governance subjects transmit and share the information through information network, improve mutual trust and understanding and cooperation, hence the social public security synergetic governance system between the government and various functional departments, social organizations and citizens. Based on this, systems of scientific decision-making, publicity and hearings are well established. We should collect public opinions and reflect public feelings more widely, enhance decision-making transparency, so as to reflect and meet the interests of all kinds of social governance subjects timely. In particular, we should pay attention to public participation platform on the network

and public opinion guidance, hold the power of the public and shared values together, and realize the effectiveness of social synergetic governance to the greatest extent.

Conclusion

Social public security governance is an important part of national governance. It is not only the realistic requirement of the current social situation, but also an effective means to curb the social instability and construct a harmonious society. It is a large systematic project. But without enough support from social organizations and the public, synergetic governance will become water without a source. Without the guarantee of operational mechanisms and participating platform, synergetic governance will also be difficult to achieve. Therefore, the public security organs must speed up updating their concepts and identifying different functions, strive to explore new ways and new forms for social organizations and the public to participate in social management, in order to develop the synergies for social public security synergetic governance, achieve the shift from “unilateral management” to “multi-lateral synergetic governance”, and meet the needs of harmonious development of the society and security of the people.

References

- 1 Chen An-hua, Reflection on Strengthening and Innovating the Social Management in China During the Period of Social Contradiction[J], Scientific socialism, No.2, 2011, pp.121-122.
- 2 Ding Kai-jie, “China’s Social Security Reform: Leading to “Multi-Center Administration” [J], Journal of the Chengdu Municipal Party College of C.P.C, No.5, 2009, p.23.
- 3 Abraham H. Maslom, “Humanism Philosophy”[M], Jiuzhou Publishing House, Beijing, 2003.
- 4 Aristotle, “Politics” [M], The Commercial Press, Beijing, 1965, p.48.
- 5 Zeng Jian, Zhang Yi-fang, Social Synergetics[M], Science Press, Beijing, 2000, p.19.
- 6 Haken H., “Synergetics and Information: Current Situation and Future Prospect— Exploration and Application Toward the 21st Century”[M], Yunnan University Press, 1994, p.1.
- 7 Yin Luan-yu, Reconstructing the Function of Government-Supported Public Service[J], Journal of Beijing Normal University (Social Science), No.2, 2016, p.118.
- 8 Commission on Global Governance, “Our Global Neighborhood”[M], Oxford University Press, 1995, pp.2-3.
- 9 David Held and Anthony McGrew, “Governing Globalization: Power, Authority and global governance”[M] Social Sciences Academic Press (China), 2004, p. 97.
- 10 Tang Huang-feng, “Social Transformation and Organized Regulation-and-Control”[M], Wuhan University Press, 2008.
- 11 Zhu Ji-hua, Synergetic Governance: the Innovation and its Path of the Paradigm of Public Management in China[J], Journal of Shanghai Economic Management College, No.1, 2010, p.5.
- 12 Yi Xuan-yu, Game Evaluation and Optimization Strategy of Social Organization in Social Synergetic Governance[J], Gansu Social Sciences, No.6, 2014, p.190.
- 13 Nie Ping-ping, The Basic Concept of Public Governance [N], Guangming Daily, Aug.18, 2004.
- 14 Hu Qi, The Realization Path of Social Organizations Participating in Construction of Social Governance “New Normal”[J], Probe, No.5, 2015, p.77-82.
- 15 Frank Leishman, Barry Loveday, “Core issues in policing”[M], The Mass Press, Beijing, 2000, p.62.
- 16 Liu Jin-tao, The Diversification Trend of Public Security Governance Body and the Dimension of Construction[J], Journal of Guizhou Police Officer Vocational College, No.2, 2016, p. 14.
- 17 Cai Xu-chang et al. The Role of Social Organizations in the Management of Migrant Population--- Research on the Harmonious Promotion Association of Cixi city in Zhejiang Province[J], Comparative Economic and Social Systems, No.5, 2011, p.199.
- 18 Feng Suo-zhu, Research on the Synergetic Construction of Public Security Prevention and Control System in Beijing, Tianjin and Hebei[J], Journal of Beijing Police College, No.1, 2016, p.60.
- 19 Research Group of Fujian Provincial Committee Party School of CPC, How can the Public Security Synergetic Governance Be Possible? A Survey of the Social Management Innovation of Guanqiao Police Station in Nanan, Fujian[J], Journal of Fujian Provincial Committee Party School of CPC, No.8, 2011, p.105.

-
- 20 Fan He-sheng, Tang Hui-min, Path Expansion and Governance Innovation for Social Organization to Participate in Social Governance[J], Journal of Beijing Administrative College, No.2, 2016, p.94.
 - 21 Research Group of Fujian Provincial Committee Party School of CPC, How can the Public Security Synergetic Governance Be Possible? A Survey of the Social Management Innovation of Guanqiao Police Station in Nan'an, Fujian[J], Journal of Fujian Provincial Committee Party School of CPC, No.8, 2011, pp.106-107.
 - 22 Xu Shuang-min et al. Research on the Path of Social Governance innovation in County's Area in the Visual Angle of Synergistic Governance[J], Study and Practice, No.9, 2014, p.73.

Note:

This paper is a research result of the scientific research project "Research on Deepening the Reform of Public Security Combat-Oriented Education and Training" in Jiangsu Police Institute (13Y07).

This paper is sponsored by Top-notch Academic Programs Project of Jiangsu Higher Education Institutions (TAPP).

This paper is sponsored by Construction Program of Key Specialties in National Public Security Higher Education in 2015.

Correlates of Police Chief Turnover in Texas

Yudu Li, PhD

Sam Houston State University

The importance of law enforcement agencies justifies and warrant the attentions of police chiefs in a modern society. No other department executive holds such authoritative power as a police chief does. To a certain degree, the quality of the job of law enforcement agencies depends not only on the personality but also on the leadership ability of their executives. Without a highly qualified and capable head, a law enforcement agency could not successfully perform its functions, carry out all the responsibilities, fairly exercise its authority, effectively enforce laws, and fully gain the trust of its citizens. Given the complexity of the job, the heavy burden that police chiefs shoulder, and the stress that police chiefs experience in modern society, a certain number of police chiefs will leave their positions. Peak and Glensor (2002) revealed that the mean tenure of a metropolitan chief was less than 4.5 years. In the social context of the state of Texas, King and Campbell (2013) asked 926 current police chiefs to specify the length they had been the chief in their current agency, and the mean was 6.57 years. Therefore, discovering the factors influencing the high turnover rates of police chief is not only necessary, but also is crucial for stable and effective policing.

Organizations cannot be understood or explained apart from their environments (Parsons, 1960), and law enforcement agencies are not exceptions. Therefore, because of the public organizational nature as well as the inherent institutional connection with other departments outside or inside the criminal justice system, "decisions and actions by police agencies, whether in policy or operational areas, are influenced by structures, procedures, and standards, not only within the police agency but also in other parts of the governmental system" (Hunt & Magenau, 1993, p. 24). A police chief works not in a vacuum, but in a role set or social network. The majority of his or her time may be allocated to dealing with various institutions and individuals within the community that he or she serves in order to effectively perform the duty. And to a certain degree, how a police chief deals with the social relationships within his or her network not only determines how he or she performs the duty, but also influences tenure, succession, and turnover. For instance, empirical studies (Murdaugh, 2005)

noted that various social relationships, significant institutions, and individuals within the community impact the turnover of the police chiefs. In the current research, the social relationships refer to police chiefs' relationships with some significant individuals and entities inside the community such as city council, city manager, hiring authorities, other city officials, as well as other executives in the criminal justice system.

Effective leadership is an indispensable and critical component for all organizations, and accordingly, leadership has been one of the popular and traditional topics for the body of the organization, management, and behavior research (Bass, 1990; Hogg, 2001). Leadership effectiveness does matter in terms of organizational effectiveness and performance as well as subordinates' performance and satisfaction. Schafer (2009) contended that even though effective leadership should be considered as a preferred commodity for and an important characteristic of police chiefs, it has not gained the necessary attention of those who research policing and police management, and scant scholarly studies have been devoted to investigating leadership effectiveness of police chiefs. Therefore, effective leadership is also important for an individual police chief, because leadership outcomes will ultimately influence his or her career. It would be reasonable to assume that a police chief with effective leadership will be more likely to retain the chief's position, while a police chief with ineffective leadership will be more likely to leave his or her position.

Management turnover is a phenomenon that all organizations experience, and researchers of organizational studies are increasingly more likely to be attracted by turnovers that are triggered by dismissal, which is usually considered as a managerial strategy adopted to "correct a suboptimal match between the manager and the firm" (Furtado & Karan, 1990, p. 60). A law enforcement agency is an organization; nevertheless, it differs from the private sectors by its public nature. Therefore, the organizational nature of law enforcement departments means that the general research findings of organization and management studies such as the negative relationship between organizational performance and manager

turnover. As Stephens (1999) observed, in certain cases, careers of police chief would be positively or negatively affected ways by performance measurement of police department. Consequently, it can be hypothesized that law enforcement agencies with poor performance should experience more chief turnovers than their counterparts with good performance.

Given the inconclusiveness of police duty and responsibilities and the facts that policing is an evolving process, developing unique and appropriate measures of police performance is not an easy task. Moore and Braga (2003) summarized that “multi-dimensional performance spread from outcomes through outputs and activates to investments being made in the organization is probably the best way to conceptualize an effective performance measurement system” (p. 444). The authors listed some dimensions of which policing performance should be measured: reduce criminal victimization; call offenders to account; reduce fear and enhance personal security; guarantee safety in public spaces; use financial resources fairly, efficiently, and effectively; use force and authority fairly efficiently, and effectively; satisfy customer demands; and achieve legitimacy with those policed. By borrowing the research findings of management and organization studies, however, it is reasonable to suggest that the performance of police departments “affects the manner by which a department’s chief will leave office” (Murdaugh, 2005, p.46); it can be hypothesized that there is a linear relationship between the performance of the police department and the turnover of police chiefs, i.e., decreased police department performance will lead to the increased chances that a police chief leave the chief position involuntarily.

Method

Data

To conduct this research, a survey was created and administered to police chiefs who came to LEMIT for the NCDP and TCPLS courses. In total, 208 surveys were administered and 175 surveys were eventually returned, which resulted in a response rate of 84.1%. After the screening of the data, 164 surveys were ultimately included in the final analysis.

In addition to the surveys collected directly from police chiefs in the LEMIT programs, three secondary data, data collected by the Texas Chiefs of Police Panel Project (TCPPP), data recorded by LEMIT, data from the Texas Commission of Law Enforcement (TCOLE) were also included in the analysis. Because

of the relatively high media exposure police chiefs receive, the current research was able to use online information to supplement some missing data. In addition, direct contact with police agencies or city governments was made via telephone or email to obtain the basic information necessary to understand the career paths of a police chief that might otherwise be unattainable.

Dependent Variable

The dependent variable in the current research was the turnover behaviors of Texas police chiefs. Specifically, in the survey instrument, one item was created to provide respondents with fourteen choices in terms of the main reason why their predecessors left their chief positions. Responses to these questions were categorized in a dummy turnover variable—voluntary turnover and involuntary turnover. This item also provided an open-ended choice to specify reasons that were not listed. These answers were carefully examined and categorized into one of the turnover groups. For example, two respondents stated that their predecessors left because their contracts were not renewed by the city governments; therefore, these two cases were coded as involuntary turnover.

Independent Variables

There were three main independent variables in the current research. The first one was the previous chief’s social relationship with significant individuals and entities within the communities. In the survey instrument, respondents were asked to rate the quality of their predecessors’ relationships with these individuals and institutes in a Likert scale from 0 (very poor) to 4 (excellent). Another independent variable concerns the leadership effectiveness of previous police chiefs. This variable was a latent variable including eight items in terms of leadership behaviors. The scale ranged from 0 (very ineffective) to 4 (very effective). The third independent variable was the agency general performance variable. This variable included a set of indicators capturing both characteristics of traditional policing and community policing. Respondents were then asked to evaluate their department’s performance while under the leadership of the previous chiefs on a Likert scale from 0 (very ineffective) to 4 (very effective).

Control Variables

The first control variable is the agency size, and the second control variable is the city’s political environment. Another control variable is the jurisdiction of the police department, which is a categorical variable with three categories and was

coded as 0=urban, 1=suburban, and 3=rural. Finally, the data also have information regarding several characteristics of previous police chiefs in terms of their careers. The information about the path their predecessors took to become the police chief of the department was coded as a dummy coded with 0=internal and 1=external; with respect to how previous police chiefs were appointed, respondents were provided with five answers, and these survey items were later coded as a categorical variable: 0= (a) by city council; 1= (b) by mayor; 2=(c) by city manager. The length of time that the previous chiefs served was a continuous variable and was measured by asking respondents the question, "Approximately how many years had your predecessor served as chief of this department?"

Data Analysis and Results

Table 1 reported the description information of all the major variables. Overall, more than half (53.7%) of respondents indicated that their previous chief left the job post involuntarily, whereas 46.3% stated that the previous chief left the job voluntarily. Stata v9 was used to construct the factor scores for the three independent variables as well as the differentiated specific performance variables in terms of traditional policing and community policing. The descriptive statistics for the factor scores of these three independent variables are presented in Table 20. According to the analysis outcomes in Table 20, the mean value of social relationships was 2.297, with an SD of 1.072. The agency performance variable has a mean of 2.340, with an SD at 1.043. With respect to leadership effectiveness, the mean was 2.051 with an SD 1.037 (see Table 18). In terms of the specific performance variables, the mean value of traditional policing is 2.256 (SD=1.000) and the mean values of community policing is 2.075 (SD=1.020)

With respect to the information about agencies, the mean number of an agency's full-time sworn employees is 24.23, with an SD value of 46.353, indicating that law enforcement agencies differ significantly in terms of the number of police officers. The mean tenure of the previous police chiefs is 5.78, with an SD value of 4.973. Of the 160 previous police chiefs, about 57.5% were appointed from outside of the agency and 42.5% were appointed from inside the agency. More than half of previous police chiefs (58.2%) were appointed by the community's city council, followed by the city manager (30.6%) and the mayor (11.2%). In terms of the jurisdiction of the agencies, about 45.1% law enforcement agencies were identified as suburban agencies, followed by rural (31.1%) and urban (23.8%).

Table 1
Descriptive Information of Major Variables

Items	N	Frequency (%)	Mean	SD
Dependent Variable				
Voluntary Turnover	85	51.8		
Involuntary Turnover	79	48.2		
Independent Variable				
Social Relationship	162		4.659	2.136
Leadership Effectiveness	159		5.041	2.552
General Performance	161		4.990	2.170
Control Variable				
Agency size	164		24.23	46.35
Years of Being Chief	162		5.78	4.973
Internal/External				
External	92	57.5		
Internal	68	42.5		
Appointment		58.2		
Authority				
Council	93	30.6		
City Manager	49	11.2		
Mayor	18			
City Political Stability		70.1		
Stable	115	29.9		
Unstable	49			
Jurisdiction				
Suburban	74	45.1		
Rural	51	31.1		
Urban	39	23.8		

General Performance Model: Binary Logistic Regression Outcomes without Differentiating Performance Variable To examine the impacts of the explanatory variables, four separate multivariate binary logistic regressions were estimated by using the software Stata. Because missing data were small, consisting of less than 5% of the total sample, they were removed from the analysis by list-wise deletion. The research findings were reported in Table 2.

Table 2. Logistic Regression of Outcome Variables on Exploratory Variables without Differentiating Performance Variable

Items	Model 1		Model 2		Model 3		Model 4	
	B (SE)	Exp (B)						
Social Relationship	-1.187 (.284)**	.35			-1.055 (.297)**	.348	-1.119. (338)**	.326
Leadership Effectiveness	-.222 (.259)	.800			-.063 (.286)	.939	-.383 (.344)	.681
General Performance			-.996 (.193)***	.369	-.363 (.273)	.695	-.021 (.357)	.979
Agency Size							-.005 (.004)	.995
Years of Being Chief							-.099 (.049)*	.906
External							-1.042 (.460)**	.352
Appointed by Mayor							-1.875 (.698)**	.153
Appointed by Manager							-.348 (.517)	.705
Stability							.019 (.519)	1.018
Suburban							-.526 (.599)	.591
Rural							.173 (.558)	1.190
Constant	3.091		2.233		3.317		4.948	
LR Chi-square	51.49***		33.68***		52.61***		64.33***	
N	157		161		156		147	

* P<.05; ** P<.01; *** P<.000

Specific Performance Model: Binary Logistic Regression Outcomes with Differentiating Performance Variable

As discussed in the method section, whether to differentiate the five survey items of the performance variables into two categories or treat all five survey items as one variable are both valid in constructing the latent performance variable. In the general performance model, this research first conducted the analysis by constructing the latent performance variable with all five survey items. The research findings in the overall model indicated that when the five performance survey items were loaded as one factor, the general performance variable had a positive, but not significant, relationship with the outcome variable. The positive relationship between

the general performance variable and outcome variable, however, was surprising and not expected. Theoretically, this research finding can be explained by the assumptions that different performances may have different influences on the outcome variable. Therefore, in this specific performance model, the five survey items of the performance variable were differentiated into two groups, traditional policing and community policing, and three separate binary logistic regression models were conducted to examine whether the two different performance variables may have different effects on the outcome variable.

Table 3 reported the analysis outcome when the performance variable was differentiated into two categories.

Table 3. Logistic Regression Model of Outcome Variable on Exploratory Variables with Differentiating Performance Variable

Items	Model 1		Model 2		Model 3	
	B (SE)	Exp (B)	b (SE)	Exp (B)	B (SE)	Exp (B)
Social Relationship			-.983 (.304)**	.374	-1.027 (.343)**	.357
Leadership Effectiveness			-.082 (.288)	.921	-.404 (.347)	.667
Traditional Policing	-.050 (.452)	.962	.223 (.528)	1.250	.726 (.639)	2.066
Community Policing	-1.074 (.475)**	.341	-.693 (.235)	.500	-.861 (.596)	.422
Agency Size					-.005 (.004)	.995
Years of Being Chief					-.096 (.049)	.909
External					-1.012 (.462)*	.363
Appointed by Mayor					-1.961 (.724)**	.141
Appointed by Manager					-.386 (.522)	.679
Stability					.080 (.526)	.955
Suburban					-.558 (.604)	.572
Rural					.199 (.565)	1.221
Constant	2.243		3.25		4.732	
LR Chi-square	39.20***		53.83***		66.51***	
N	161		156		147	

* P<.05; ** P<.01; *** P<.000

Conclusion and Discussions

The analysis outcomes in Table 2 and Table 3 indicated that social relationship variable consistently had significant and negative effects on the outcome variables, that means, police chiefs who had poor

relationship within the institutional environments are more likely to leave their position involuntarily. Furthermore, the variations of the effects of the performance variable, in accordance with inclusions or without inclusions of relationship variables, were one of the most interesting findings of the current research, which indicated that the relationship variables exerted substantial and

strong influence on the agencies' performance effectiveness, as well as on the implementation of policing strategies.

Finally, two control variables had significant and negative correlations with police chief turnover. Specifically, compared with their counterparts, police chiefs who were appointed by mayor and from outside were less likely to leave involuntarily.

References

Bass, B. M. (1990). *Handbook of Leadership: Theory, Research and Managerial Application*. New York: Free Press.

-
- Furtado, E. P., & Karan, V. (1990). Causes, consequences, and shareholder wealth effects of management turnover: A review of the empirical evidence. *Financial Management, 19*, 60-75.
- Hogg, M. A. (2001). A social identity theory of leadership. *Personality and Social Psychology Review, 5*, 184-200.
- King, W. R., & Campbell, B. (2013). *The Texas Chiefs of Police Panel Project Report*.
- Hunt, R. G. & Magenau, J.M. (1993). *Power and the police chiefs*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
- Moore, M. H., & Braga, A. A. (2003). Measuring and improving police performance: the lessons of Compstat and its progeny. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies and Management, 26*, 439-453.
- Murdaugh, J. T. (2005). Succession and the police chief: An examination of the nature of turnover among Florida police chiefs.
- Parsons, T. (1960). *Structure and Process in Modern Societies*. New York: Free Press.
- Peak, K. J., & Glensor, R. W. (2002). *Community policing and problem solving: Strategies and practices*. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall.
- Schafer, J. A. (2009). Developing effective leadership in policing: Perils, pitfalls, and paths forward. *Policing: An International Journal of Police Strategies & Management, 32*, 238-260.

Session 5



Characteristics and Investigation and Prevention Countermeasures of Illegal Fund-raising Through P2P Platform —Taking Zhejiang Province as An Example

Xu Peng

Associate Professor of Zhejiang Police College, Doctor of Law, Wuhan University

LI Qing

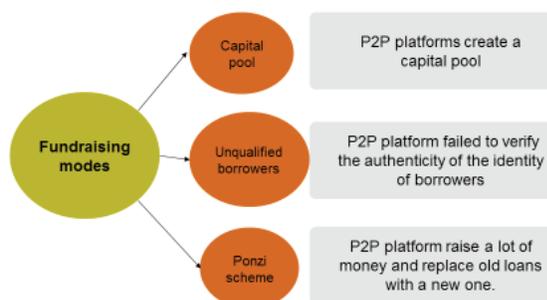
Deputy Director of the Criminal Police Office, Xinyu Public Security Bureau

Abstract

In recent years, with the rapid development of China Internet finance, P2P platform industry has seen an explosive growth. However, with the unclear entry criteria and inadequate supervision, network lending platform in China has been used for illegal fund-raising by some criminals. Because of the active private investment and financing activities, Zhejiang Province has become the new areas of high incidence of illegal fund-raising. As a new type of crime, illegal fund-raising through P2P platform in Zhejiang has the nature of exaggeration and fraud in investment, attracting a large number of investors, involving huge amount of money and having great liquidity. In order to combat this crime effectively, public security agencies should take the initiative to freeze and confiscate proceeds of crime rapidly, build an effective intelligence network, make appropriate collection and exploration of electronic data, attach great importance to the social stability during criminal investigation. At the same time, relevant departments should strengthen the supervision of the P2P platform operation, improve publicity and education to enhance the ability of investors to detect fraud and stop the spread of illegal fund-raising activities.

Keywords: P2P network lending platform, Illegal fund-raising, Criminal Investigation, Financial regulation

II. Illegal fundraising mode through P2P platform in Zhejiang Province

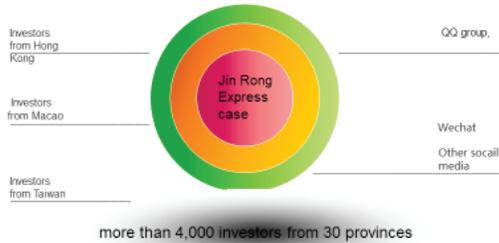


I. Criminal Law in Regulating Illegal Fundraising through P2P Platform



III. Characteristics of Illegal Fundraising Crime through P2P platforms in Zhejiang Province

- C. Participation of A Large Number of Investors



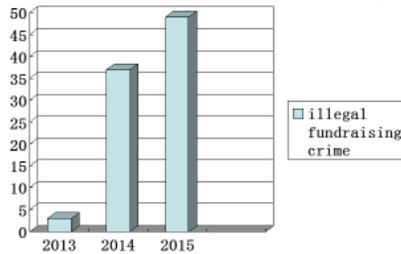
III. Characteristics of Illegal Fundraising Crime through P2P platforms in Zhejiang Province

- D. False or Deceptive Publicity



III. Characteristics of Illegal Fundraising Crime through P2P platforms in Zhejiang Province

- A. High Incidence of Cases of Illegal Fundraising through P2P Platform



IV. Challenges Facing Zhejiang Economic Investigation Department

- A. Intervention Opportunities



III. Characteristics of Illegal Fundraising Crime through P2P platforms in Zhejiang Province

- B. Huge Sum and Heavy Losses Involved



IV. Challenges Facing Zhejiang Economic Investigation Department

- B. Evidence Collection



IV. Challenges Facing Zhejiang Economic Investigation Department

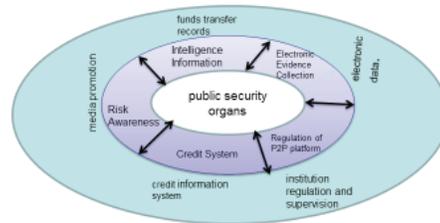
- C. Recovering The Ill-gotten Gains



The Regulation of P2P Lending Platform

V. Strategies for Investigation And Prevention of Illegal Fundraising through P2P Platform

- A. Enhancing Collection and Analysis of Intelligence Information



The Framework and Implementation of a Commission on Justification of Police Armed Action in Taiwan

Alice Sang

Central Police University, Taiwan

Abstract

In Taiwan, an on-duty police officer shot a suspect in the leg as the fugitive drove in reverse to escape from a crime scene in February 2014. The injured suspect bled to death from the wound. The police officer was put on trial for criminal misconduct a year later. The highest court found the police officer guilty and sentenced the defendant to six months in prison for abusive armed action. However, the internal post-incident investigation conducted by the Police Department concluded that the police officer was not guilty because he followed standard operating procedures throughout the event, and deemed the court verdict unacceptable. The Director General of the National Police Agency even openly praised the officer for his proactive action, bravery, and responsibility in the incident. The discrepancies between the court's decision and the police administration's conclusions aroused concerns as to whether prosecutors and district attorneys are competent to make judgments on the proper procedures and policies for use of gun. These concerns led to the establishment of a task force to study the use of deadly force. This paper first examines the major factors of police duty, administrative areas of judgment, and the expert witness system of the Code of Criminal Procedure in Taiwan. A proposed commission on the use of deadly force is found to be not only desirable but also feasible. Finally, the paper introduces the framework of the commission including international practices and the existing police review system.

Keywords: Police services, use of deadly force, criminal procedure

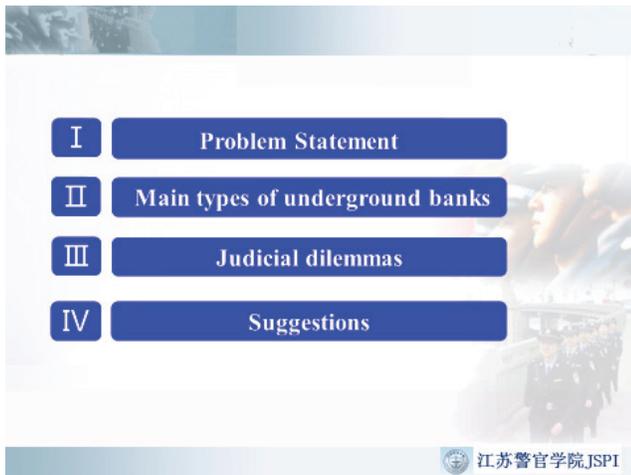
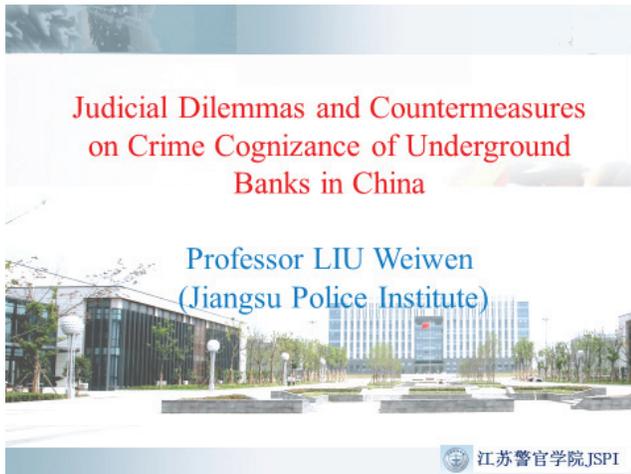
Session 6

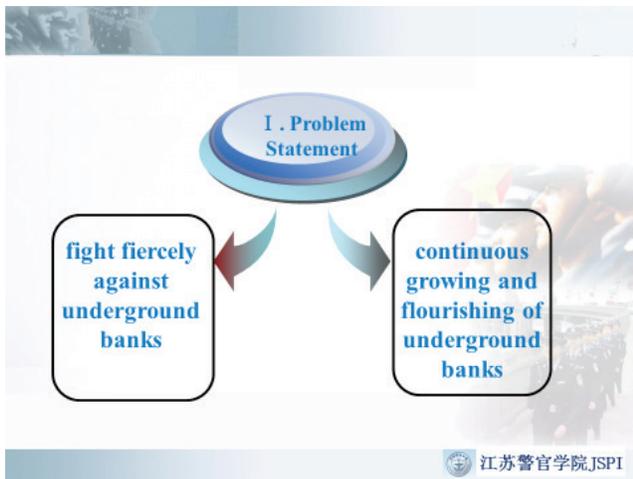


Judicial Dilemmas and Countermeasures on Crime Cognizance of Underground Banks in China

Liu Weiwen

Jiangsu Police Institute





III . Judicial dilemmas in fighting the underground banking crimes

Since Criminal Law Amendment (7) passed in 2009, there exists no argument on the conviction of the underground banking cases.

中华人民共和国刑法修正案
(七)
(主席令第十号)

江苏警官学院JSPI

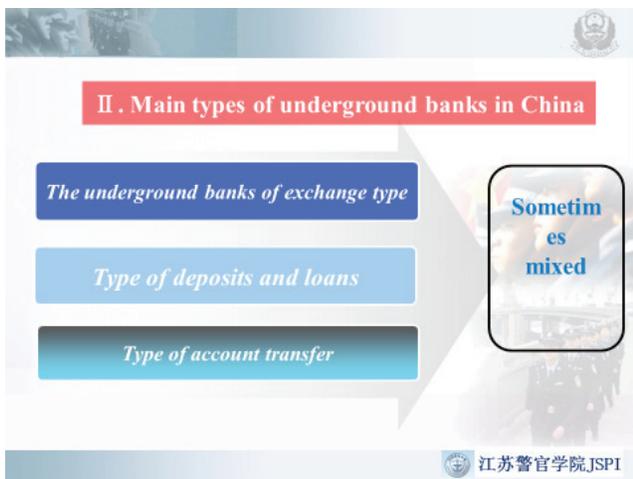
where is the dilemma on combating the underground banking crimes?

Are there any lag and lack of law facing crimes triggered by underground banks?

Should the judicial organs transfer their strategies or introduce some more efficient measures and systems?

江苏警官学院JSPI

- A. Difficulties in discovery and conviction**
- B. Difficulty in obtaining criminal evidence**
- C. Difficulty in proving the amount of money for illegal business**
- 江苏警官学院JSPI



- IV. Suggestions on fighting the underground banking crimes**
- A. Strengthening the foundational work to improve the ability of investigation**
- B. Enhancing cooperation with various administrative departments and establishing an effective cooperation mechanism**
- 江苏警官学院JSPI



C. Identifying reasonably the amount of the money in the case

D. Innovating theory and mechanism of evidence by adopting accessorial proof method such as Sampling evidence and so on



Thank you !

Negotiated Control of Lived Space in Urban Environments: A Theoretical Critique

Judith Harris

University of Houston, Downtown

Kingsley Ejiogu

University of Maryland Eastern Shore

Abstract

This qualitative analysis focuses on urban deterioration and the subsequent revitalization of a major urban downtown area as it relates to the use and control of public and private space. Based on interviews with self-proclaimed “street people,” it can be argued that conflict theory best predicts and explains the control of urban space, particularly in phases of urban renewal. The presence of Spitzer’s *social junk* is a key element in the business and politics of the inner city environment and can be easily tracked in Downtown Houston. Contradicting contemporary academic anarchists Ferrell and Amster, it is argued that *social junk* unlike *social dynamite* can peacefully exist as long as the dominant social group — the economically privileged — is part of the equation.

Keywords: Gentrification, Street People, Academic Anarchist, Criminalization, Public Space

Introduction

The purpose of this study is to theoretically examine the urban social structure of cities in the context of the social control of the often labeled “urban underclass.” This historically marginalized group runs the gamut from harmless and homeless transients to high risk mentally ill and potential criminals. The study adopts a qualitative methodology to recount the lived experiences of this population within the evolving social conflicts and dilemmas of urban gentrification. Amid the growing academic interest in the social control of space, are many misunderstandings about, and oversimplifications of the lived space of street people. This study explores the politics underlying the cleaning of public space and how it impacts the circumstances of transients—all together classified as the homeless.

The urban spaces in Houston, Texas are primarily examined in the context of sheltered and unsheltered homeless, and the homeless in city jails. The negotiated control of lived space can be described through the individual experiences of those camped along the underpasses and parks of the greater metropolitan area and each account provides material that might help explain the impact of the process of gentrification. As we will see, the tactics of social control often appear as mechanisms of conflict and order. It will be argued

that long held prejudices contribute to academic cynicism that limits the appreciation of the subtleties, joys and heartaches of street living which is, in many ways, not so different from propertied living. Preconceived notions of the dynamics of street life most often overlook the balance and stability that exists within any city’s transient population. This narrative attempts to address the shortcomings in the existing literature and better shape our understanding of the homeless and their role in maintaining urban order so that theories of social structure might better reflect the realities of an evolving concept of shared space.

Regardless of where it takes place in America, the process of urban renewal is always controversial and divisive pitting vested interest groups and community leaders against each other. It has also spawned sociological inquiry into the nature of urban planning. In one perspective, La Gory and Pipkin (1981) stress that cities are not products of human creation, but should be viewed as natural phenomena. Henri Lefebvre (1996) also suggests that neighborhoods should be viewed as natural areas. In his *Writings on Cities*, he argued that modern cities no longer belong to the people. He suggests that more space in the modern city is being produced for us rather than by us. According to Mitchell (2003:35)

***A space in which the cry and demand for
the right to the city can be seen and heard***

– is often not its preordained publicness. Rather, it is when, to fulfill a pressing need, some group or another takes space for representation. Representation both demands space and creates space.

Arguably, urban areas grew up in response to trade routes based on economic pursuits. During medieval times, a city was accessible to all transients; however, according to La Gory & Pipkin (1981) transients had no legal foothold within the residential parts of the city. Public space included the narrow thoroughfares and the market place, similar to the inner city of today; social distance was maintained between those wandering the streets downtown and those who lived there by terracing the house fronts and by focusing the residents' social lives in rear gardens. However, there was harmony between the two groups, each knew their place and were able to live together without discord. Similarly, it can be said that people in today's cities build high-rises and walls to escape from street people and other "undesirables."

Technological platforms are often used today to predict and estimate the likelihood of crime across diverse neighborhood types and structures. To understand the phenomenon of spatial structuring, it is important to consider how social structures in cities evolved. During the 1920s and 1930s ecologists saw the city as an organization with a life of its own. Park and Burgess write:

The organization of the city, the character of the urban environment and of the discipline it imposes is finally determined by the size of the population, its concentration and distribution in the urban area (1925:6).

As in the days of the Chicago School, displacement can arise when cities are arranged primarily around economic interests.

According to Williams (1977), people who move into the inner city or downtown areas insist on a higher quality of food and housing with the hope that paying inflated prices will reinforce and convey a sense of status to those less fortunate than them. Alpern (1979) suggests that those who live in downtown areas are unencumbered by any sense of family responsibilities and have no economic problems. Alpern calls these individuals "urban pioneers," who routinely risk not only their own safety, but also risk their financial well-being by turning undesirable neighborhoods into high-end unfriendly environments. Beauregard (1986) goes into more depth by highlighting the characteristics needed for a downtown area to be gentrified. He suggests:

The neighborhoods to be gentrified are deteriorated and occupied by lower and moderate income, often elderly households (p.37)

Revitalizing an urban environment produces unique stressors on both the rich and poor. Politics and the economics play a significant role in the designation of public and private space, engendering debates and struggles over who is welcome in any particular public space and who may be denied access. Concern over the rights of individuals coupled with what some call social justice also drives the debate on the fairness of space allocation (Mitchell, 2003). Growing cynicism amongst those who study inner-city spatial interests is rooted in the belief that local government and urban "renewalites" are determined to remove any vestige of space not allotted to some vested interest group. Perhaps, as noted by La Gory and Pipkin (1981), the spatial structuring of the inner city creates order, which allows the city dweller to avoid dangerous and unpredictable situations. Furthermore, spatial structuring allows both the rich and poor the run of the city, creating stability between the two groups. The question arises, then, whether spatial structuring is solely a function of the interests of propertied groups.

An Interest in Space and Social Control

The writings of Ferrell (1993, 1997, 2001, and 2005) and Amster (2004) propose an explanation for the use, and more importantly, the lack of, lived space specifically in urban environments. Ferrell and Amster, self-proclaimed "academic anarchists," oppose most forms of social control in America's downtown areas. The critical propositions of academic anarchists discussed in this work are:

- Street people are marginalized and criminalized.
- Street people are being unfairly ousted from public spaces.
- Government and urban renewal removes any space not allotted to a vested interest group.
- Urban cleansing is a factor of urban growth.

Both Ferrell and Amster decry the criminalization of the street culture. The notion that those who are homeless are axiomatically involved in some form of criminal activity is not a new one. The old proverb "idle hands make the devil's work" is still applied/adhered to in some circles as the mantra for law enforcement. In a 1999 Federal lawsuit, veteran San Antonio patrol officers argued that they were retaliated against in a dispute with a supervisor linked to their challenge of what they

argued were illegal orders to arrest or move those who lived in Downtown San Antonio. According to testimony by officer Serna, what he initially thought was identifying troublemakers, he later realized was official harassment (*Onofre Serna v. City of San Antonio*, 2001).

Along these same lines, a Raleigh, North Carolina ordinance requires panhandlers to be licensed. Even though the licenses are free, it is unlikely that those who do panhandle would go to city hall and request one. Thus, the Raleigh Police Department will have the full force of the law behind them when they arrest those who loiter and beg in the downtown areas.

San Francisco, known for its care and compassion toward street people is also cracking down on them. John Ritter of *USA Today* (2002) outlined San Francisco's attitude change concerning its homeless. According to Ritter, the National Law Center on Homelessness and Poverty found an increase in the number of arrests (22%) from 1999 to 2002 of those loitering in the streets and an increase (14%) in ordinances against sleeping in public. Ferrell (2001:3) senses the "changing rhythm" of the street, particularly in the criminalization of those using public space. He cites as evidence the targeting of street musicians, known as buskers, for police harassment and the enforcement of ordinances that make sitting on a public street a crime.

The ousting of people from public space has been consistently chronicled throughout history and is currently a popular topic among urban anarchists. Ferrell, (2001: 3) in particular, argues that anyone who does not "tow the line" or those who "march to their own drummer" will be denied access to public space. Urban anarchists contend that public space is slowly being whittled away from those who most need to use it. The anarchists, according to Ward (1973:28) are united in a belief in the "theory of spontaneous order."

The notion of spontaneous order was first discussed by Bernard de Mandeville in his book *The Fable of the Bees* (1714). According to Ashford (1999), Mandeville's observation was that individual self-interests, instead of being looked upon as negative, could in fact lead to public benefits for society as a whole. As with most philosophical issues it can, and is, interpreted in many ways. Ashford then examines the question of "spontaneous order" as discussed by Austrian Philosopher F. A. Hayek. Hayek's position was that spontaneous order will keep society moving, as it should. Therefore, there will be no need for a

central command, as a free society knows what to do out of its own evolving traditions. And, adds Ashford, our society permits individuals to seek their own ends and in doing so, they often meet the needs of others (2005). However, all across cities in the United States, private and public coalitions have strengthened their enforcement powers to deny transients, lived spaces—as public spaces—which raises questions about the theoretical underpinning of public spaces. This sustains the moral and political dilemma of the distribution of spatial resources in society.

Urban Cleansing and the Politics of Public Space

According to urban anarchists, large corporations and municipal ordinances are taking over "public space." As a result, cities are left devoid of space reserved for denizens of the streets. However, the following weaknesses of this approach should be considered: not all street people are suffering from the loss of space to call their own and not all street people are marginalized and criminalized. There is a well-defined balance between those Spitzer (1975) calls "social junk" and "social dynamite" and those who are economically able to live in the inner city.

Urban anarchists primarily draw on media coverage for much of their information. Despite the fact that many social and commercial media accounts may be true in terms of how a city (and for Amster this is "Tempe") addresses its homeless/space problem, there is still a question of how permanent this "ousting" or "cleansing" is. Conceivably, events of urban cleansing may be a temporary response to pressure brought by whatever vested interest group has the greatest control over a specific or isolated event.

The following analysis explores various claims made by urban anarchists. Using the Downtown area of Houston, Texas, we will examine the ways in which urban rich and poor inhabitants interact and coexist. This analysis is a partial qualitative test of anarchist's views of social control, in particular, where the boundaries of law and public order meet. The ethnographic method used is common to these urban scholars, as it involves field interviews and observations. We begin with a brief overview of the Houston Downtown area.

Houston: The Place to Be

The glory days of Houston centered on the oil boom of the 1920s and the rapid rise in Houston's population. The demand for Texas' oil increased through the 1970s; the Arab oil embargo caused the price of oil to escalate, and many people moved into the city from the "rust-belt" of New York and Pennsylvania. Until the early 1980s, the city's main financial source remained oil-based and Houston's Downtown boasted large department stores, ballrooms, hotels, and the offices of oil tycoons. Houston was an oil-rich city and through those years of prosperity, the rich and poor alike came into the city to work and peruse the furs and clothes in Sakowitz and Foleys. Working class folks strolled through Woolworth's, sat at the air-conditioned lunch counter and watched as the oil barons left their offices to talk "oil" in the spacious lobby of the Rice Hotel.

Main Street was a mecca for transients. The cool breeze of a department store's lobby spilling out onto the hot Houston sidewalks would provide relief for the denizens of the street. The "haves" were generous to those who stood on the corners begging for change, the "have-nots" reciprocated by not harassing those who gave. The control of space within the city seemed to be a non-issue. Despite the glaring economic separation of the rich, poor and homeless, there was a sense of balance between the three groups. This balance was empowered by the relentless pursuit of wealth, political ambition, and the image of Houston as an up and coming city.

The City's Demise and Growing Cynicism

Circumstances changed when the Houston economy crashed in the middle 1980s — the oil/trade embargo was at an end, and the city struggled for alternative economic pursuits (Nationmaster, 2007). Downtown department stores catering to the rich were empty as luxury cars and homes were auctioned off. Limousines no longer parked along "Main Street," the Rice Hotel checked in fewer and fewer guests. Once busy offices were boarded up, and the ballrooms and the bars closed their doors. The privileged Downtown areas of Houston were no longer a by-product of economic success, and space was no longer at a premium. The inner city was left to those who walked its streets and slept on its sidewalks. Free of any restrictions, it became the territory of the dispossessed. Houston's Downtown District was no longer a place to go after dark. The streets were empty except for the homeless and those who had the misfortune of taking a wrong

turn off the freeway. The Metro — Houston's mass transportation system — bypassed the Downtown area, and the poor who worked as janitors and sales personnel had to walk several blocks in the blistering heat to their low-paying jobs.

New Vested Interests and a New Balance

Today, approximately 1000–1500 homeless people live in the Downtown area's streets. Most have wandered the neighborhood for two years or more, sleeping in large department store entranceways. However, the local Woolworth's on Main that provided a place for hot coffee and leftover food is no longer there; a victim not only of renovation, but a larger national trend of city revitalization and the exodus of discount department stores to the suburbs. The revitalization of the Downtown district hit Main Street the hardest. For years' transients and the chronically homeless lived along Main Street. It was "normal" to encounter them and most posed no threat to workers Downtown.

During the late 1990s, revitalization was well under way. Construction made it impossible for anyone to drive or spend time on Main Street. However, those who had previously resided along and on it continued to do so. Construction crews routinely chased off those sleeping under scaffolding — only to have them return the next day. The street people now had another source of inconvenience — construction workers coupled with extra law enforcement officials hired as private security at each work site. A new balance began to emerge. Space was no longer free in Downtown Houston. Many feared that extra law enforcement and construction crews would alienate those who had previously used the streets as "their space." It seemed possible that "public space" including sidewalks, benches and storefronts would become "private space" only available to those who could afford to live Downtown.

Over the years, the Houston economy has been forced to diversify, even though oil still accounts for about half of all revenue. Houston is also home to NASA and the largest medical complex in the country, which includes research centers and hospitals and provides Downtown venues for four major professional sports. Houston operates the second-busiest port in the nation, and maintains a strong international business sector. It has many museums and performing arts venues. When the Hobby Center opened in 2002, Houston laid claim to the largest theater district outside New York City. Vested interest groups in Houston have flourished

throughout the years of revitalization. The impact these groups have had on who can use “public space” in Downtown Houston is of great importance.

How have the changes associated with gentrification, social acceptance and other forms of spatial conflict affected the lived spaces of the homeless –both the sheltered and the unsheltered in the city of Houston? Using data obtained from the United States Department of Urban Development (HUD) we plotted the temporal order of changes in the number of homeless individuals living in Houston, Harris County from 2007-2015. Based on the HUD ‘point in time’ count of homeless in Houston, Harris County, Texas in 2014, the number of sheltered homeless individuals (1627), and the number of unsheltered homeless individuals (2291) decreased by 26% and 33% respectively in 2015 (Figure 1 and Figure 2). These sequential decreases may represent the number of individuals who found more permanent non-street residencies within that period. The years 2009 and 2010 represent particularly notable periods in which the number of the sheltered homeless exceeded the number of the unsheltered –by a margin of about 53% and 28% respectively. Ordinarily, for the other years, the city of Houston has provided shelter for fewer homeless and more have remained on the streets. Altogether, the percentage decline in the sheltered homeless was 50% compared to 63% for the unsheltered individuals. These differences could also be explained by the fact that the city provided about 40% more transitional bed spaces for the homeless than the sum of emergency and safe haven shelter beds—since its primary interest is to remove the transients from public spaces (see Figure 3).

At the state level, the number of homeless individuals declined about 40% between 2007 and 2015 in Texas (Figure 4). Although there has been a steady decline of homeless individuals on the streets of Texas urban centers over the past 8 years, the State of Louisiana has had a comparatively higher rate of annual decline. Nonetheless, on a cumulative level, the decline in Texas exceeded that of Louisiana by 15% (Figure 5). Presumably, the pattern of changes in the number of homeless individuals in the city, reflects the impact of changes in policies, conflicts, vested interests and other social challenges related to a transient lifestyle. The homeless are a particular demographic group whose power of political advocacy is almost non-existent. While our position is not that the transient lifestyle is a positive one, in view of our modern social culture, rather the narratives which follow indicate that many transient lifestyles are cultures adopted by individual choice and not the lack of it.

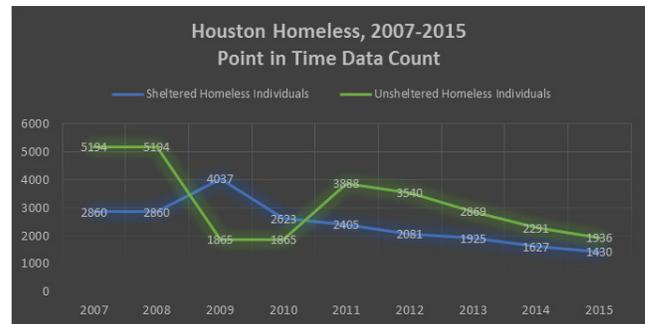


Figure 1: Houston Homeless, 2007-2015 Point in Time Data Count

Data Source: United States Department of Housing and Urban Development Homeless Data Exchange (2016)

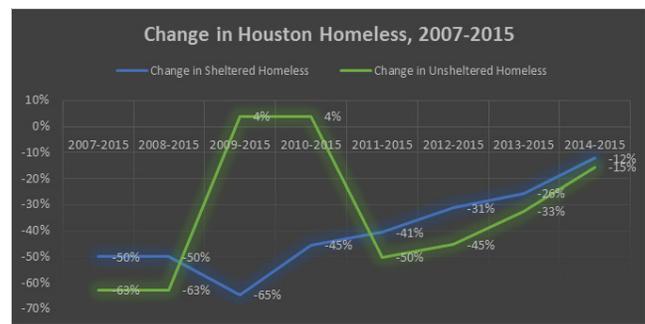


Figure 2: Change in Houston Homeless, 2007-2015.

Data Source: United States Department of Housing and Urban Development Homeless Data Exchange (2016)

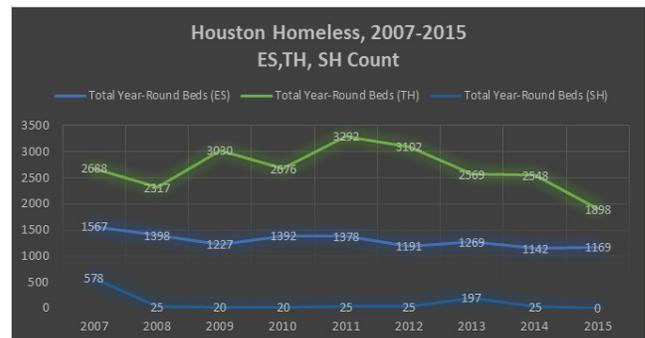


Figure 3: Houston Homeless, 2007-2015, ES, TH, SH Count.

(Emergency Shelter –SH; Transitional Housing –TH; Safe Haven –SH)

Data Source: United States Department of Housing and Urban Development Homeless Data Exchange (2016)

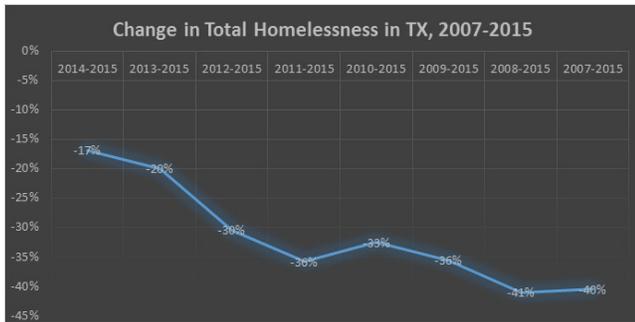


Figure 4: Change in Total Homelessness in Texas, 2007-2015.

Data Source: United States Department of Housing and Urban Development Homeless Data Exchange (2016)

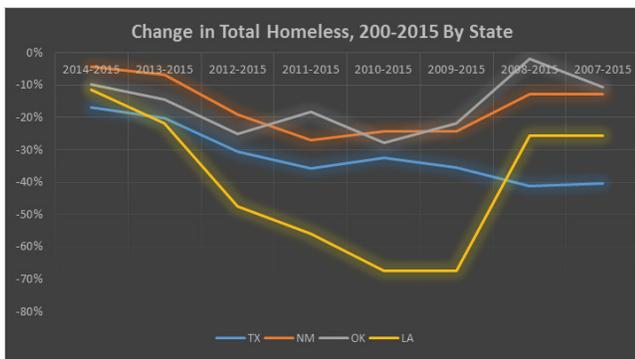


Figure 5: Change in Total Homelessness by State, 2007-2015.

(Texas –TX; New Mexico –NM; Oklahoma –OK; Louisiana –LA)

Data Source: United States Department of Housing and Urban Development Homeless Data Exchange (2016)

Negotiated Control of Lived Space

In attempting to explain the negotiated control of lived space in urban environments, our conversations with those who live on the streets in Downtown Houston have helped us to see that public space has not been completely taken over by private interests. Although there are city ordinances that criminalize sidewalk sitting and dumpster diving, they are rarely enforced. Discussions with law enforcement, the judiciary, and Houston’s Downtown street people have led us to the conclusion that public space is there for anyone who wishes to use it, especially those who live on the streets.

It may never occur to most that “public space” has its own agenda. Space, or the use of space is for many, an opportunity for representation (Mitchell, 2003). Mitchell explains the political

organization of area by illustrating how public space allows political movements to stake out their territory: “Only in public space, for example, can the homeless represent themselves as a legitimate part of the public” (2003: 129). He continues, “Political organizations can represent themselves to a larger population, and through this representation give their cries and demands some force” (2003: 129).

Perhaps this political force is one that empowers the academic anarchist to suggest that there is no space available for those who live Downtown. It may be that they feel a need for “space” so that their own cries and demands can be heard. It is often said that politics and social issues should never be mixed, to do so in the instance of “lack of space” is to confuse the core of how individuals live on the streets. Ferrell goes as far as to equate the fight for public space with Rossellini’s film *Open City*. Ferrell suggests those on the frontlines who are desperately trying to “fight to free public space” (2001: 231) are like Rossellini clones, heroically waving the banner of freedom.

Anarchists and others fighting to free public space these days make the same movie. Staging scenes amid an occupying (though sadly not retreating) army of cops and developers they work to create a new wave of liberatory urbanism, to celebrate the possibilities of an open city an eclectic urban community — and like Rossellini, they engage ordinary citizens, and go with them on the streets, in order to confront the subject and circumstance of their endeavor (2001: 231).

One must question the motive for a revolution for space when those who live on the streets feel no need for one. Conversations with Houston’s Downtown street people repeatedly find that not only is there no need for anarchy, but they are vehemently opposed to such anarchical, banner-waving extravaganzas — especially when such events are staged in their name. Both Ferrell and Amster discuss at length the “Disneyfication” and “sanitation” of downtown urban areas (Ferrell, 2001; Amster 2004). It may not be unfair or certainly not such a stretch to propose that their form of anarchism itself may be viewed as “Hollywoodesque” in its sometimes fantastic and outrageous views on urban growth and the lack of what they have coined “public space.”

Individual Experiential Narratives

We discuss now the issues and problems in the lived spaces of the urban transient from our ethnography as seen through the eyes of those who live and work in Downtown Houston. In no way is there any attempt to quantify data; all interviews

are conversational in nature, and each participant was asked for their opinion on how they negotiated their own lived space in an urban area. Without ethnographers like Ferrell and Amster, future research on those who live alternative lifestyles would be less forthcoming. Therefore, this final part of the paper has been written, in keeping with the tradition of the natural elements of street ethnography.

Nighttime at the Jail: A Law Enforcement Perspective

It is midnight outside the Inmate Processing Center. Lines of people sit along the sidewalks. Those lucky enough to own their own transportation sit in their cars and wait while others stretch out on benches or lean against walls. *Nobody sleeps* and everyone is scared — after all, this is Downtown Houston. Police vans and cruisers line up to enter the jail sally port. The corner store is open. Men and women (no longer inmates) shout for joy as they hear the door close behind them. Family members who scan the doorway are quick to identify their own. They scoop them up and whisk them back to the familiar and friendly neighborhoods. Throughout the night, citizens and law enforcement officers congregate on the sidewalks and street.

Sleeping close to the jail defies logic. Why would street people gravitate to such a negative environment? According to Amster (2004) and Ferrell (2005) as well as others, receiving any form of comfort from such a tyrannical environment would be virtually impossible — tantamount to cultural suicide, and at the very least, foolish. While it is true that few find comfort within the jail, cells are small and space is at a premium, life on the streets is not ruled by criminological theory. Nor do those discussed in this case study care about the academic discussions on lack of space. These individuals have their space and it is wherever they choose it to be. Some of these individuals are so well known around the criminal justice complex that they virtually have the area to themselves.

Many in law enforcement are fascinated by this concept of 'living close to the jail'. For example, Pretrial Officer Smith was asked his perception of those who sleep close to the inmate processing center. Smith and others like him regularly bring out coffee and water for those who occupy the public areas around Downtown. "They are ok by me — I would rather have them down by the jail than those waiting for release time." When asked why, Smith replies "Those who live down here go to sleep at night just like you and me — so they sleep on the sidewalks — no big deal." "What would you prefer?"

asks Smith," Those who sleep or those who are running wild?" Interestingly, *they* (the homeless) *all sleep and not one of them is scared*. This, Smith points out is in contrast to those "regular folks" waiting around the jail who never sleep and are always scared.

When asked about the cause of homelessness, Smith feels that most street people in the Downtown area are there by choice. He stated, "They like a little variety and enjoy the economic rewards that living Downtown can bring them." Smith also believes the city has taken great care in not making public spaces off limits to the homeless. In fact, he says, "The areas surrounding the jails are much safer now for the street people than they were before revitalization began."

Smith was asked if he had noticed any changes within the homeless community in Downtown Houston. He responded by indicating: "The streets of Downtown Houston are nice and clean now; even the street people must appreciate that." Smith believes that there has been little or no change in spatial designations of the Downtown streets. Public space, he maintains, will always be there—those who need to use it can, and no one has, or will ever, run them off. "As long as they are not harassing other people, then they should continue to sleep wherever they want."

Houston, Smith continues, does not persecute street people; they are able to use public transportation and are not publicly ridiculed. This contrasts with Amster's Tempe, as he writes, "Poor people with homes are at least out of sight for the dominant culture, if not out of mind. Lacking private spaces, however, the homeless are often in plain view, and therefore subject to the most direct forms of official exclusion and public persecution" (2004:97).

Mary & Sally

Two people who lived in the shadows of the Main street revitalization project (who for the purposes of this paper will be called Sally & Mary) are able to give firsthand accounts as to how that balance was formed. Mary explains,

When the yellow diversion signs went up and our streets were closed to thru traffic we knew that things were gonna be hard on us. It was like it happened overnight, one day the streets were open. The next day cops were standing guard at each intersection.

Sally is an alcoholic lesbian, and is in her late forties. Homeless by choice, she mirrors the sentiments of the characters in Toth's (1993) *Mole People* who live beneath the streets of New York. When Sally is asked why she does not choose to go to a shelter, her response is that "Crime is too

high in shelters; you have to always watch your back and your belongings." Also, Sally reports, "You have no privacy, no space to call your own." And, she continues, "You have a goddamn curfew." Kraus also touches upon the question of being homeless by choice, although in a somewhat negative vein. Sleeping on the street he explains, is a demonstration of independence for some, they control their actions and the resulting consequences (Krause, 2004). For Sally, the consequence of her homeless state is simple: she is free, alive, and has her own space.

Mary will not give her actual age, but she appears to be older than her friend. Mary is always tired and an on-and-off patient of Houston's Mental Health and Retardation Clinic, she uses drugs regularly and is rarely sober. When asked why she chooses to live in the Downtown area her response is short. "Life is good down here...nobody bothers you, the law don't care whether we are dead or alive and I can sleep wherever and whenever I feel like it."

Sally and Mary will agree that they have both benefited from the "mucker-de-mucks" moving back into the city.

When Houston's Downtown became vacant, there was only us homeless down here. No one had money and there were no fancy restaurant – which means there were no garbage cans filled with uneaten food.

Bernard, one of Toth's tunnel dwellers, also comments on the availability of food after responding to Toth's inquiry about eating arrangements, "They throw away the cream of the cream in New York, which makes scavenging relatively productive" (Toth, 1993:103). One can only assume that with all the upscale restaurants springing up in the Houston Downtown District that Mary & Sally get their fair share of "cream." They manage to keep their area clean and are only told to move on when, as in Mary's case, behavior is marred by drug-use.

Jack

Many of the homeless in Houston are among the working poor. People earning minimum wage can't earn enough to support a family or pay inner city rent. Jack is forty-eight years old, tall, black and an engineer by trade. He lives in the Downtown area of Houston. He will tell anyone who will listen that he comes from Louisiana and has been living in the area for the past ten years. For Jack, the Downtown streets of Houston are his home. His smell precedes him; he is disheveled, and wears his hair in long dirty Rasta-like dreadlocks.

On any given day, Jack can be seen striding along Commerce Street wearing several layers of dirty and torn clothes. Those who encounter him for the first time are afraid of him. Most cross the street to avoid contact and those who have come too close clutch their purses and briefcases as if in imminent danger of being assaulted.

Amster (2004) characterizes those like Jack as vagabonds, transients, and strangers without a home — displaced persons. Historically, this may be an accurate portrait of many street people. However, there is nothing hopeless or displaced about Jack — he will tell you that he is well cared for and exists quite happily off the prosperity of those who live and work in the Downtown district. Jack is able-bodied, not a victim, and is very aware of how he lives and has chosen to live at large in the Downtown areas. Jack believes that most people lack compassion for the homeless. He discusses his own perception of how others treat him and his fellow street people with ease. Individuals, Jack postures, "usually encounter us when running around Downtown spending lots of money or going to shows." Most, he continues, "appear afraid" of him which Jack uses to his advantage. People give me a handful of change just to get out of my way. "I always smile when they are not afraid, and then I say thank you — and move along." There are others who, like Jack, understand the fear that their presence can instill in those they approach for money. Lonnie Ray, a homeless man interviewed in downtown Baltimore (Rulison, 2001:1-15) reveals, "Panhandling can be done in a way that doesn't scare people." He said he uses a sign as a passive way to ask people for money. "All people don't get scared," Ray said. "That's only if you follow them. If they give me something, I say 'thank you, God Bless you.'"

Saxophone Man

It is difficult to find any of the "fight and fall back" syndrome that Ferrell discusses, those marching along the urban "spatial frontier happening" (Ferrell 2001:221), in Downtown Houston. In fact, the "Saxophone Man" who sits on Main Street near the University of Houston Downtown has never heard of any spatial frontiers or participated in any marches. His story is different than Jack's. He was "always poor and never expects to be anything other than poor." However, his account of life in Houston's inner city is similar to Jack's. "Saxophone Man" has been "a frequent visitor" of the Downtown jail. He survives by panhandling and playing a saxophone outside Houston's Downtown theatres, restaurants and on the bridge outside the University of Houston-

Downtown. When asked why he chooses to play the saxophone, he responds, “why not.” Apparently, he learned the basics in a school band and has progressed very little beyond that. On a good night, he can make as much as \$50, while other nights he is lucky to make change. When asked about his frequent visits to the jail, he will only say that sometimes he drinks a little too much and has been caught “pissing” where he shouldn’t.

Space is very important to the man who finds joy in playing his music. He plays next to his sax case; always open, ready to receive whatever a passerby throws in it. A bottle of beer and a newspaper help define the remainder of the area that he calls his own. Once again, if there are movements designed to ostracize the poor and the politically marginalized (Ferrell 2001: 224), they have had no effect on this man.

The Bridge Dwellers

Why draw attention to ourselves?” is the response from one of the street people who live under the bridge near the University of Houston Downtown when asked whether or not he would fight to keep his place under the bridge. “Nobody has asked me to move from here,” he says. The homeless men and women who have made their homes under the Buffalo Bayou Bridge are well organized. Each person has their space, defined by a sleeping bag or a flattened-out cardboard box. They are located at the very heart of Downtown Houston and are in full view of all who work in Houston’s criminal justice system. Judges and officers alike pass the street homes on a twenty-four-hour basis — yet, not one of these bridge dwellers has been told to move from their space. One law enforcement official, when asked his view on those under the bridge, concluded, “They are ok. It is just as much their bridge as it is mine...” and he added “there but for the grace of God go I.”

Brian is a “Bridge Dweller,” a self-proclaimed drifter. He looks much older than his 29 years and passes that off as “being weathered.” Each night Brian collects his flattened box, carefully hidden behind the buttress of the bridge, settles down and sleeps until daylight. He shares the space with 15-20 others who congregate just before dark to socialize and sleep. The One Main Street bridge community is fluid. Most who live there, like Mary and Sally, move around in the Downtown area. Brian admits that life under the bridge is better than checking into a shelter. The usual “they steal the clothes off your back” is his response when asked why he chooses to avoid the shelters.

Larry is fifty-eight years old, and, “just sitting waiting to get on disability.” Larry is friendly and eager to share his story. A Vietnam veteran, long distance truck driver and “sort of an entrepreneur” is how Larry describes his life. He has been living on the streets of Houston for more than ten years. When asked whether he chose to live on the streets, Larry’s answer was simple. “The streets chose me; I couldn’t make it in the regular world. I suppose my anger and my disgust at the 9 to 5 way of living was what got me here.” Larry’s disability check “is in the mail.” When asked where he received his mail, Larry smiled and lit another cigarette — “you really don’t expect me to tell you that, do you?” When asked why that was such a big deal in disclosing where he got his mail, Larry smiled and decided it was time to go look for something to eat. Before he left I asked Larry how he felt about using the public space beneath the One Main Street Bridge.

I like it under here, people are friendly, nobody fights and there are very, very few drug problems. We have been moved off a couple of times, but, we always come on back. The law does not bother us in fact a couple of them bring us hot drinks and water on a regular basis. As long as we keep the place clean, and don’t scare folks, we are left alone. Space in downtown Houston has changed very little, remember all those fancy lofts were already here as banks and such. The sidewalks and bridges are the same as they were 30 years ago. I bet you, when all these fancy folks move out of downtown we will still be here, living under the bridge.

Conclusions

Not all political input into the revitalization of a downtown area is detrimental to those who live on the streets. Although political and economic pressures often act against individual and social interests, effective city planning can encourage citizen participation at all levels (La Gory & Pipkin, 1981). To many, the revitalization of Downtown Houston has been well-thought-out. The depressed downtown market offered many advantages and office vacancies assured investors that old buildings would be sold at low prices complete with attractive tax breaks. However, the idea of revitalization did meet with some resistance in terms of neighborhood change, historic integrity and use of tax-payer financed incentives. At the same time, revitalization of urban spaces should not be linked to the inevitable criminalization of the street natives.

Certainly, life on Houston’s streets can’t be sorted into neat boxes of hate and disregard for the society in which the homeless exist. Public space is

what it is, public, and there for those who need to use that space to live and sleep. One does not have to look too far to see how the criminal justice system deals with local ordinances and petty crimes. In some cases, Houston Downtown ordinances are upheld and those individuals who are blatantly breaking those laws may or may not be arrested. However, for the most part, law enforcement leaves well-enough alone. There will always be some form of resistance to the tearing down of old buildings to make room for newer ones. Vacant lots will be turned into parking lots and green-space will be overtaken by coffee shops and arcades. Street people, in turn, will do what they do best — reorganize themselves and move to another space or adapt to changes, settling in along the fringes of the newly tarred parking lot.

One inference might be that it is less the homeless who are crying about being ousted from public spaces and more those who have made an academic career by documenting them. By this, we are not questioning the value of sociological and academic street reporting, but merely noting that one's own ideology will color the observations one makes. There must be balanced reporting of instances involving street people and the way most of them really live their lives. This is not to say that Ferrell and Amster, and others are not reporting truthfully, but it is just as important to discuss the subtleties, joys, and hopes of street living as it is to share the heartaches. Regardless, it seems that conflicts associated with the presumed propertied control of lived space are neither universal nor entirely as previously described. It is incumbent on policy makers to choose to democratize the welfare of this unvocal demographic group, or continue the unending chase of a transiency which by nature, maintains its balance in change.

References

- Alpern, D. M. (January 15, 1979). A city revival? *Newsweek* 97 (3), 28-35.
- Amster, R. (2004). *Street people and the contested realms of public space*. New York: LFB Scholarly Publishing.
- Ashford, N. (1999) Features: - Spontaneous order. *The Freeman*: Ideas on liberty – July, 49 (7). Retrieved from the web January 27, 2007 at <http://www.fee.org/publications/the-freeman/article.asp?aid=4571>
- Beauregard, R. A. (1986). The chaos and complexity of gentrification. Pp. 37 – 38 In Smith, N. & Williams, P. (Eds.) *Gentrification and the city*. Boston: Allen & Dunwin.
- Ferrell, J. (2005). *Empire of scrounge: A cultural criminology of urban scavenging*. NY: New York University Press.
- Ferrell, J. (1993). *Crimes of style: Urban graffiti and the politics of criminality*. NY: Garland.
- Ferrell, J. (2001). *Tearing down the streets: Adventures in urban anarchy*. NY: Palgrave.
- Ferrell, J. (1997). Youth crime and cultural space. *Social Justice*, 24, 21-38.
- Kraus, L. (2004). "Not in my backyard!" When economics of urban revitalization collides with the rights of the homeless: An argument for an ethical response. St Paul, MN: University of St.Thomas: Center for Business Ethics.
- La Gory, M, and Pipkin, J. (1981). *Urban social space*. Belmont: CA: Wadsworth, Inc.
- Lefebvre, H. (1996). *Writings on cities*. Cambridge, MA: Blackwell.
- Mitchell, D. (2003). *The right to the city: Social justice and the fight for public space*. NY: The Guilford Press.
- Nationmaster.com.(2007). "Downtown-Houston." Retrieved from the web January 28, 2007 at www.nationmaster.com/encyclopedia/Downtown-Houston
- Onofre Serna v. City of San Antonio* 244 F. 3d. 479, 2001
- Park, R. E. and Burgess, E. W. (1925). *The city*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Ritter, J. (December 27, 2002) Homeless hurt on several fronts. *USA Today*, A 03.
- Rulison, L. (2001). Seeking change: Baltimore lags in curbing panhandling. *Baltimore Business Journal*
- Spitzer, S. (1975). Toward a Marxian theory of deviance. *Social Problems*, 22: 638-651.
- Toth, J. (1993). *The mole people: Life in the tunnels beneath New York City*. Chicago: Chicago Review Press.
- United States Department of Housing and Urban Development (2016). Homeless Data Exchange. PIT and HIC Data since 2007. Retrieved from the web January 28, 2007 at <https://www.hudexchange.info/resource/3031/pit-and-hic-data-since-2007/>
- Ward, C. (1973). *Anarchy in action*. New York: Harper & Row.
- Williams, R. (1977). *Marxism and literature*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Policing Global Challenges: Taiwan Experience Exchange in Fighting Telecoms Fraud

Wen-Chih "Billy" Huang
Central Police University

Policing Global Challenges: Taiwan Experience Exchange in Fighting Telecoms Fraud

Dr. Wen-Chih "Billy" Huang

Assistant Professor
Border Police Department
Central Police University
Taiwan

July 7, 2016

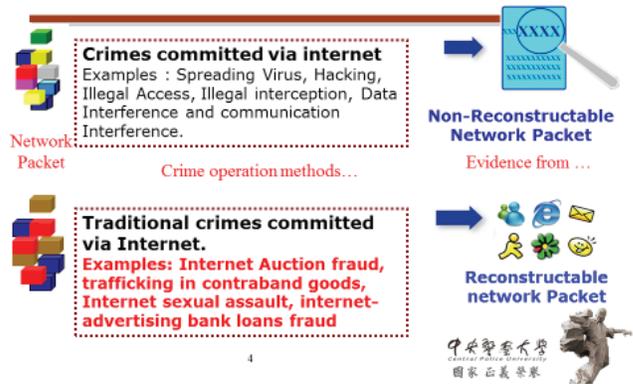
- "Cybercrime is a game changer for law enforcement. It changes the way police mount an investigation," says Noboru Nakatani, Executive Director of the INTERPOL Global Complex for Innovation.
- The Future of Policing:
It is crucial for police to stay one step ahead of criminals. In today's world this can only be achieved if law enforcement officials have real-time access to information beyond their own borders.
The digital age has opened up immense new opportunities to police forces, providing secure communications channels and instant access to criminal data. Innovation must become best ally.

Introduction

- Experts have warned that the cost of cybercrime is larger than the combined costs of cocaine, marijuana and heroin trafficking.
- In Europe, the cost of cybercrime has apparently reached €750 billion euros (\$964 billion) a year.
- US banks reportedly lost \$US900 million (\$890 million) to conventional robbers in 2011 but \$12 billion to cyber criminals.



Two Major categories of Cybercrime



Cases Study

• Telecom Fraud Crime

- Case of "A Number" Change
(The "A Number" is the same as the Caller ID)

• Internet Fraud Crime

- Case of Auction Crime

• Hacker Intrusion

- Case of collecting 50,000,000 items of Personal Data for Several Fraud Crime Groups

11



Telecoms Fraud

- One of telecommunications frauds, the Internet fraud, the scheme uses the Internet as a tool to defraud prospective victims to conduct bank account transactions to others connected with the scheme.
- Most of the cases, the suspects claim themselves as police and prosecutors, the victims were extorted money from the suspects by telling them they would face money-laundering charges unless they transferred money to the suspects' designated "safe" accounts. Authorities have to trace the telecoms syndicate by checking the Internet Protocol (IP) addresses of the suspects' equipment.



Case of "A Number" Change

- Recently the ways of fraud groups are from local, traditional phone fraud to **new type of cross boarder fraud crime with advanced ICT technologies**
- By "A Number" of VoIP Display, they can change their numbers into the ones of public services, banks, famous trading companies

• Major Types:

Cash in Delivery or Draft by Counter to Specified Account

- Pretend Police or Prosecutor for case investigation
- Pretend Hospital to apply medical stipend, or take case investigation

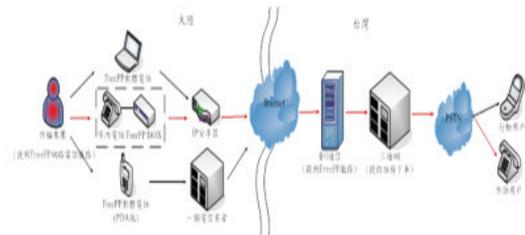
ATM Operation

- Phish Website, 3C or Book Internet Shop, Internet Bank with Installment fund transfer

12



Internet Route Map of Telecoms Fraud between Suspects and Victims



Auction Fraud Crime

• Major Crime Types :

1、Fake Auction



2、True Auction

(Replace the targeted good with different one in delivery)



3、Triangle Fraud

(Trick both seller and buyer as victims)

13

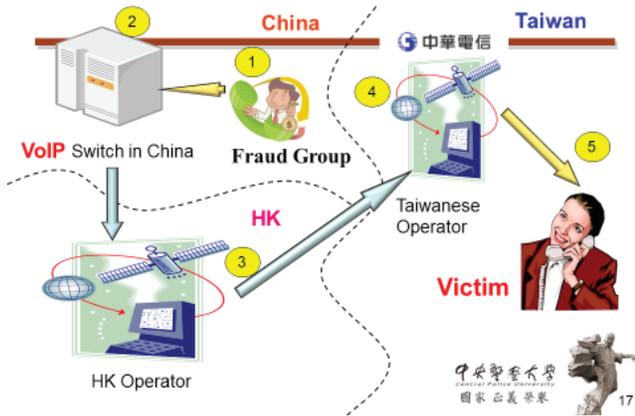


The Movement Trails of Fraud Call Center Platform

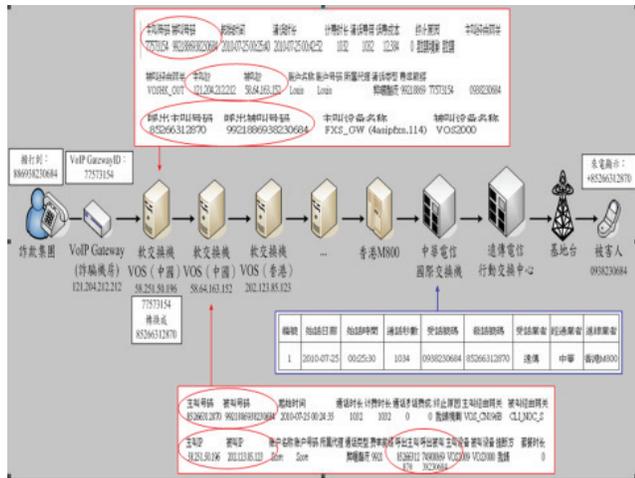
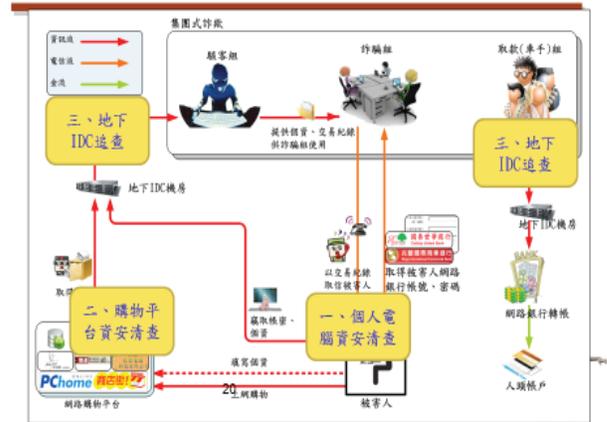


16

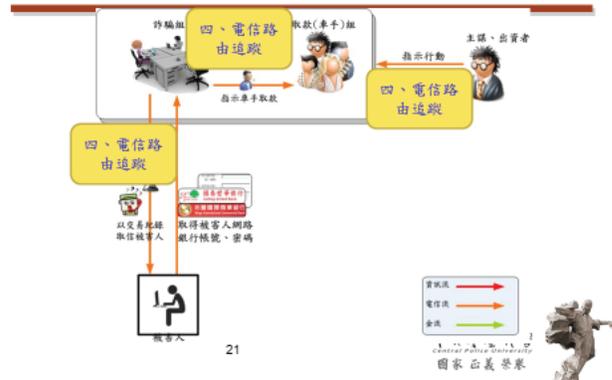
"A Number" Display Change



Investigation of IP Addresses



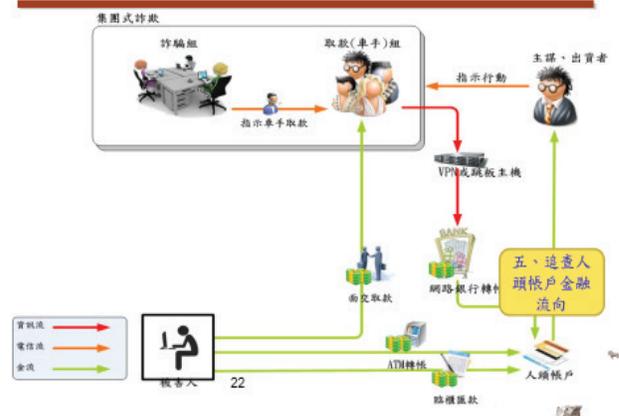
Investigation of Internet Routes



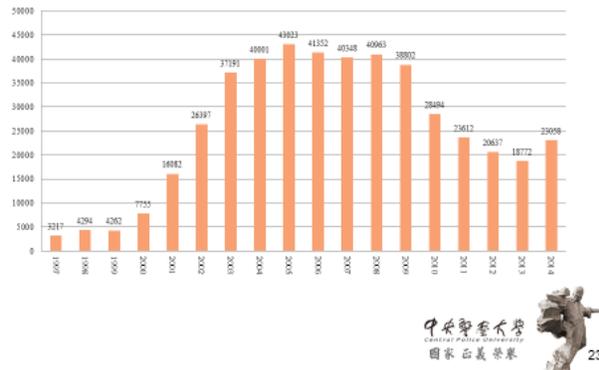
Structure of Telecoms Fraud Syndicate



Investigation of Money Laundry



The 1997-2014 Tendency of Fraud Cases in Taiwan



23

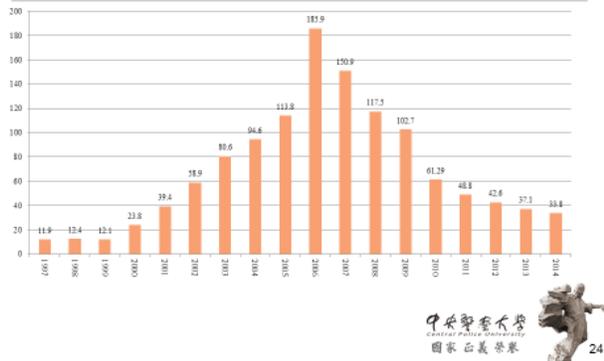
Telecoms Fraud Prevention Initiatives

- Cross-ministerial integration meetings.
- Strengthening the techniques and methods of fraud investigation.
- Integrate all information and cooperation.
- Constructing an Internet network security management mechanism.
- Implementation of account alert mechanisms.
- Setting up 165 anti-fraud hotlines.



26

The 1997-2014 Tendency of Property Loss of Fraud Cases in Taiwan



24

Cross-Strait Joint Investigation in Southeast Asian Countries

At present, the joint fraud-crime combat between Taiwan and the police of mainland China has been expanded to a third cross-border cooperation. Successful cross-Taiwan Strait cooperation with Southeast Asian countries, such as in the following operations: 0310, 0928, 1129, 0823, 1206.



27

Telecoms Fraud Prevention Initiatives

- Fraud has been emerging in Taiwan since 2000.
- Taiwanese government has integrated various resources and established interagency platform meetings with the cooperation of the competent authorities of policing, legal, telecommunications, financial services, the Internet, and the industry itself since 2004.



25

Snap Shot of Hong Kong Victims of Fraud Cases in July, 2015

The victims

413 Hongkongers fell victim to phone scams by fraudsters posing as mainland officials between January 1 and August 13

Age group	Percentage
20 or below	13.4
21 to 30	22.8
31 to 40	14.4
41 to 50	18
51 to 60	18.2
61 to 70	7.4
71 or above	5.8

Source: Hong Kong Police

Breakdown of the 413 victims by occupation

Profession	Percentage
Housewives	22
Service industry workers	20
Students (secondary and tertiary-level)	17
Office workers	9
Managers	8
Professionals (e.g. doctors, engineers, etc)	6
Retirees	5
Businessmen	4
Finance workers	3
Educators	2
Unemployed	2
Media workers	1
Civil servants	1

SCMP



28

Growth of underground economy

- The untraceability of the origin of these transactions poses a major challenge to law enforcement agencies in their efforts to fight crimes of this nature.
- Cross-boundary remittance between Taiwan and China, Hong Kong and China, or Taiwan and Southeast Asian countries do not involve actual fund transfers through banking systems.
- Remittance agents normally join in partnership with underground remittance agents in other country to conduct the remittance business.



At International Level - Interpol

- The INTERPOL Global Complex for Innovation (IGCI), which has been ramping up staff since November 2014 but officially opened on 13 April and is focused on providing operational support, capacity building and cybercrime research.
- IGCI is a research and development facility for the identification of cyber crimes and criminals and it provides specialist training and operational support for police jurisdictions around the world. Hosted in Singapore, it is the only other INTERPOL office in the world, outside the headquarters in Lyons in France.
- “More than half of our 190 Interpol members don’t have digital investigation or cyber forensic capabilities. They don’t know how to investigate this new generation of crime.”



Investigative Strategies applied in Combating Telecoms Fraud

1. Installment of mutual legal assistance.
2. Modernizing in domestic legislative framework and investigative strategies.
3. Deployment of police liaison officers.



Mutual Legal Assistance

- The Agreement on Joint Cross-Strait Crime-Fighting and Mutual Judicial Assistance was signed by Chiang Binkun (ex-president of SEF) and Chen Yunlin (ex-president of ARATS) in the third Chiang-Chen meeting and taken into effect on June 25, 2009.
- Police from Taiwan and Mainland China implemented the contents in the Agreement, established cooperative mechanisms, and actively fought against cross-border fraud crimes and have attained remarkable achievements.



Mutual Legal Assistance

- The international response to cybercrime is briefly outlined in the context of the United Nations Transnational Organized Crime Convention (in force from September 2003) and the Council of Europe’s innovative Cybercrime Convention.
- Signing bilateral legal assistance and multilateral conventions are more effective to allow law enforcement agencies to receive and provide assistance in collecting evidence in criminal cases involving other countries, particularly using coercive measures where necessary.



Mutual Legal Assistance

From 2011 to 2012, the two sides of the Taiwan Strait worked with the police from Southeast Asian countries to launch three large joint investigation actions, codenamed, 0310, 0928 and 1129, arresting a total of 2,056 criminals related to the fraud groups and achieving a great effect.



Taiwanese fraud suspects arrived in Taipei on a chartered flight from Macau on June 11, 2011



35

Police to Police Cooperation

- Such development tendency is exactly shown from the reality that Taiwanese and Mainlander suspects of fraud syndicates were successively nabbed from Vietnam, Thailand, Indonesia, Malaysia, Cambodian, PDR Laos, Philippines, Sri Lanka, and Bangladesh.
- Taiwan National Police Agency's Ex-director-general Wang Cho-chiun said that the operation had dealt a heavy blow to the fraud rings and helped reduce fraud cases in Taiwan. Moreover, he said, "We believe the operation has set a new trend in joint crime-fighting" (CNA, 2011).



36

Modernizing in Domestic Legislative Framework and Investigative Strategies

- Telecoms fraud is regarded as one kind of cybercrime since there is criminal offence involving a computer and the Internet used to commit a material component of the offence.
- Owing to the across-border impact of telecoms fraud, Taiwan government is using legal, organizational, and technological approaches to fight against it.



37

Legal Approach

- From 1997, the use of a 'computer device' to commit offences relating to breaches of privacy or fraud attack gives a stiffer sentence than breaches by other means. In Taiwan's Article 339-1 to 339-3 of Criminal Code, the illegal use of computer and other devices to commit fraud is regulated.



38

Organizational approach

- The installment of intelligence exchange.
- Cooperative investigation and synchronized action.
- Assistance in the investigation of criminal facts. The implementation of justice shall be based on the complete collection of criminal evidence.
- Increased exchanges between police and academics.



39

Technological approach

- New technologies often impede the lawful interception of communications, specifically in relation to users' anonymity and encrypted messages.
- Law enforcement agencies generally require a warrant to obtain personal identification of an IP address subscriber, such as the individual's name, address, email address or telephone number from telecoms service providers. The warrant is also required to retain telecommunications data for the purposes of the detection and prosecution.



40

Police Liaison Officers

- Although the liaison officers do not have powers to investigate in the jurisdiction where they are posted, they facilitate the requests from and to their home country for information, evidence, interrogations, arrests and extraditions.
- In fighting with telecoms fraud, police liaison officers often have a role at the tactical level in explaining the legal and operational particulars of the law enforcement systems of their host country to their colleagues home and advising the most promising avenues for cooperation.



41

Future Challenges

3. Internet Black Market Formed

- Information of backdoors, breakdown
- Phishing
- Cross-boarder Crime
- Professional Hacker
 - Stealing Account information
 - By Trojan or faked website, get account name, password, personal or transaction information



4. Greater Development of Internet Lawful Interception

- Multiple Internet Applications and Services to 140+
- Decoding method for LI must be aligned with protocol upgrade, such as IM: MSN · QQ
- Unique encryption break down, such as VoIP · Skype



44

Techniques applied in Combating Telecoms Fraud

- Computer forensics involves the search, seizure and analysis of electronic evidence, which is most often found on personal computers but can also be found on virtually any modern electronic device, e.g. VoIP Gateway.
- Strengthening up the skills and capabilities of computer forensics in those cooperative foreign law-enforcements becomes the priority issue in the whole war against telecoms fraud, which needs more social capital investment by police authorities in the pursuit of final accomplishment of fraud control.



42

Recommendations

In order to prevent and suppress telecoms fraud, a multilateral cooperation in Asia region and Global needed to be crafted to fight against telecoms fraud and ensure all countries involved to:

1. Adopt laws making telecoms fraud activities criminal;
2. Enforce the laws or extradite criminals for prosecution by other Sates;



45

Future Challenges

1. Emerging High Tech Crime, High Risky Social Security

- The outlaw use modern technologies to commit more crimes
- Emerging high tech crime challenges lawful investigation drastically

2. IT with Telecom, Fraud Crime Cross Boarder

- Anonymous, cross-boarder ICT crimes will be the major features in Internet, mobile phone...etc platforms. If lawful enforcement cannot keep up with technology, it will be great impact to efficiency and capability of LEA
- Leader of hacker group likes to commit crime cross strait



43

Recommendations

3. Cooperate in investigating and in providing usable evidence for prosecutions;
4. Participate in formulating and agreeing to adopt standards and practices that enhance cyberspace safety and security;
5. Take steps to ensure that technology does not outpace the ability of law enforcement to investigate and improve collaboration between the private sector and law enforcement;



46

Recommendations

6. Create an international forum for discussion, ongoing response to technological developments, and technical assistance to developing States;
7. Develop forensic computing skills by law enforcement and investigative personnel for operational cooperation between law enforcement agencies.



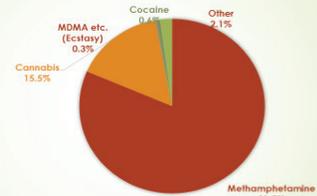
Measures against Drug Abuse in Japan

Shinji Nakamura

Outline of the Presentation

- 1 The Current Situation of Drug-Related Crimes in Japan and Measures against the Problem
- 2 Measures against New Psychoactive Substances(NPS)

Percentage of Persons Arrested for Drug-Related Crimes(2015)

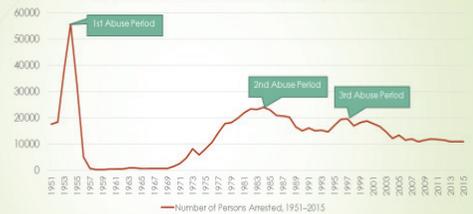


- Persons arrested for Methamphetamine account for over 80% of the total
- Recent increase in the use of cannabis

- 1 The Current Situation of Drug-Related Crimes in Japan and Measures against the Problem

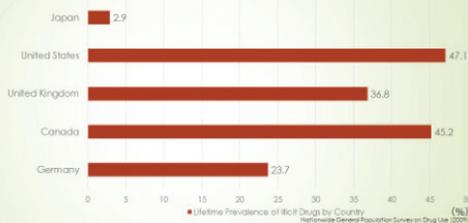
Transition of Persons Arrested for Methamphetamine-Related Crimes

Number of Persons Arrested, 1951-2015



- 1st Abuse Period: Philopon (methamphetamine) extremely popular in society devastated by defeat in the war
- 2nd Abuse Period: Increase of smuggling and trafficking as funds of organized crime groups(BORYOKUDAN)
- 3rd Abuse Period: Increase of abuse by younger generations, such as junior high and high school students

Lifetime Prevalence of Illicit Drugs by Country



- Significantly lower rate in Japan than other countries

The Five-Year Drug Abuse Prevention Strategy

The following five goals were set in the Fourth Strategy:

- Prevent people from abusing drugs by enhancing efforts to raise awareness among young people, families, and communities, and by raising normative consciousness
- Strictly prevent relapse into drug abuse by supporting drug abusers through treatment and reintegration into society, and by enriching support for their families
- Eliminate drug trafficking organizations, thorough control over end users, and strengthen oversight of diversifying drugs for abuse
- Interdict entry of drugs into Japan through strict crackdown at the border
- Promote international cooperation to interdict drug smuggling



Drug abuse prevention class provided by a police officer



Enlightenment poster for drug abuse prevention

Transition of NPS Issue in Japan

- Around 1998: Spread of the abuse of magic mushrooms, a drug not subject to legal regulation but whose effect is similar to methamphetamine; increase in the number of abusers transferred to hospitals
- Around 2004: Homicides and other crimes occurring along with the increase in the number of shops selling such drugs
- Around 2011: Became known as a "law-evading herb" and rapidly recognized as a social problem
- 2014: Named a "dangerous drug"



Partial Suspension of Execution of Sentence

For example, a sentence of "three years in prison with one year suspension of sentence under three-year probation in replacement of one year of the imprisonment period"

2 years	1 year
Prison sentence without suspension	Suspension of sentence
↓	Suspension of sentence under probation
	3 years
Guidance in prison	Social rehabilitation

Measures against NPS

- 2006: Introduction of the Designated Substances Control System
- 2012: Inclusive Designation System was introduced to inclusively restrict substances with similar chemical structures
- April 2014: Prohibition of the possession or use of designated drugs
- December 2014: Expansion of the scope of substances subject to prohibition of sales at NPS shops, etc.; tightening of the regulations on advertisement of NPS

2 Measures against New Psychoactive Substances (NPS)

Measures against NPS

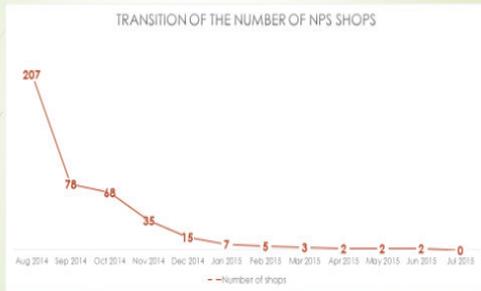
「The Emergency Measures to Eliminate the Abuse of NPS」 created in July 2014

- 1 Thoroughly ascertain the actual situation of NPS and enhance enlightenment on the risks
- 2 Ensure prompt designation of drugs and crackdown on NPS-related crimes
- 3 Reexamine the ideal regulations on NPS in response to the situation

Change of Name
 Substances that used to be called "law-evading drugs" may encourage abuse due to the misunderstanding that these substances are not dangerous and illegal.
 → The new name "dangerous drugs" was given.



NPS: Transition of the Number of Shops



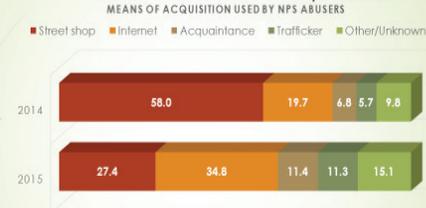
Conclusion

- Initiatives conducted by the government overall, such as the Fourth Five-Year Drug Abuse Prevention Strategy
 - The illicit drug-related problem in Japan is less serious than before
- Increased number of methamphetamine smuggling cases due to globalization, etc., resulting in possible aggravation
 - Continuous efforts, including not only crackdown but educational activities at schools, are necessary. Treatment and supports have to be expanded.
- Introduction of the Partial Suspension of Execution of Sentence
 - Appropriate implementation of this system is essential to prevent relapse into drug abuse.
- A certain positive effect of the government-led measures against NPS
 - Further measures, including cyber patrolling, need to be taken against internet marketing.

Footnotes

- 1 China enacted anti-terrorism law in 2015.

NPS: Means of Acquisition



Shift of acquisition from street shops to the Internet

It is necessary to strengthen cyber patrolling and take further measures against internet marketing



Plenary Session 2



Strengthening the Relationship Between Academia and Practice Through International Efforts

Phillip M. Lyons

Sam Houston State University

Unlike my work many years ago as a police officer, as the Dean of an academic college at a university, I am privileged to work in a very safe environment. The bad guys I deal with today are those whose GPAs drop too low or, at worst, who cheated on an assignment. I don't arrest people any more, but counsel them or, at worst, initiate professional remediation plans. I don't have to don a vest anymore to thwart bullets, but, at worst, have to develop thick skin when people say inhospitable things about my leadership or decisions. Occasionally, though, we are reminded that life can be very different for the people engaged in the work that we study. The murder of five Dallas police officers mere hours ago is a potent reminder that policing can be a very dangerous enterprise.

When I agreed to serve as Dean of this college, it was with the goal of improving the practice of criminal justice. I want us to do everything we can to make policing more effective, more efficient, and more acceptable to our communities. And, of course, more safe. We are well positioned to do this here at Sam Houston State University. When we were established 52 years ago, it was with a mandate to provide undergraduate and graduate education to prepare criminal justice professionals to work in the field, to provide professional development in the form of continuing education for professionals on an ongoing basis, to conduct research that informs that practice, and to provide technical assistance to agencies to help them understand and respond to the problems they confront. Because our center includes partner institutes, such as LEMIT and CMIT (who co-sponsored this conference) and because we have connections to the field that go literally around the world, we are uniquely positioned to elevate that practice.

But our international work does more than simply expand our sphere of influence and circle of concern. It enriches our understanding of the practice of criminal justice here and elsewhere. At this time in our history, it is important for all of us to revisit very fundamental questions about the police. In asking those fundamental questions, our journalism majors across campus often talk about

the five W's and the H: Who, what, where, when, how, and why? Questions like:

- Who are the police and who do they need to be in order for the police to have legitimacy?
- What is the role of the police in society?
- Where does the authority to hold police accountable reside?
- When should the police view others as threats?
- How should the police go about police work?
- Why is there so much hatred and hostility toward the police?

This conference revisited these basic questions.

In answering the question:

- I. Who are the police and who do they need to be? one of your papers addressed
 - a. Comparative police legitimacy in Asia and the US

In answering the question

- II. What is the role of the police in society?, one presentation addressed the
 - a. Negotiation of control of lived space in urban environments
- III. Asking Where does the authority to hold police accountable reside? You looked to answers in
 - a. Social safety governance and policing modes in neighborhood, considered
 - b. Corruption among Taiwanese correctional officers and explored
 - c. Turnover of Texas police chiefs
- IV. When should the police view others as threats?
 - a. One paper examined the creation of a Commission on Justification of armed police action in Taiwan
- V. How should the police do their jobs?
 - a. Collaborative policing model in an urban community in China
 - b. Crime prevention (form to substance)

-
- c. How we can innovate with varying levels of: access to information, democracy, and adherence to the rule of law
 - d. And how do public security organs choose to innovate
 - e. COP in Taiwan
 - f. Interrogation techniques
 - g. Specific crimes such as
 - i. Fire policing
 - ii. Prevention countermeasures in illegal fundraising
 - iii. Drug abuse
 - iv. Telecommunication fraud
 - v. Underground banks
 - h. Forensic data
 - i. International Police Cooperation among China and its neighbor countries
 - j. Challenges of cross-border policing
- VI. Why is there so much hatred and hostility toward the police?
- a. Micro level calls for service affecting attitudes toward the police
 - b. COP affecting Citizen ratings of police
 - c. Differences in perceptions of police integrity among Taiwanese police and businessmen
 - d. Contact hypothesis relative to perceptions of police generally, by Nigerian immigrants in particular, and in Thailand specifically

We may only have partial answers, and those to only some of the issues, but that's more than we would have without your efforts. Moreover, there is great value to be had in simply asking the right questions. The famed US inventor, Charles Kettering observed: "A problem well stated is a problem half solved." You are clarifying the problems and incrementally chipping away at them with solid data, and thoughtful analysis. One of the most exciting developments of my professional career has been to watch the establishment and building of a knowledge base in the field. When I started in the field more than 30 years ago, the police in this country did what we did because we always had. Since then, we have begun—slowly—sometimes painfully to build a body of knowledge. Knowledge of what works in policing and, equally importantly, what doesn't. You have contributed to that knowledge. In doing so, you allow us and hundreds of other institutions around the world to elevate police practice. To make policing more efficient, more effective, and safer—for ALL parties concerned. As we all go to our respective homes, most of us will retreat to the safe confines of our colleges and universities. As we do, we would do well to remember that those whom we study don't always have it so good. Yet you, through efforts such as those you've presented here, are changing that. For that, I am grateful. The field is grateful. And our communities are grateful.



Sam Houston State University

MEMBER THE TEXAS STATE UNIVERSITY SYSTEM

SPECIAL THANKS

Plenary Speakers: Phillip M. Lyons and Jihong Solomon Zhao
Rita Watkins

Bill Blackwood Law Enforcement Management Institute of Texas
Doug Dretke

Correctional Management Institute of Texas
Huntsville/Walker County Chamber of Commerce
Sam Houston Statue and Huntsville Visitor Center
Chief Kevin Lunsford, Huntsville Police Department
Warden Kelly Strong, Wynne Unit, Texas Department of Criminal Justice